

A
SERBIAN GRAMMAR

OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

LONDON EDINBURGH GLASGOW NEW YORK

TORONTO MELBOURNE CAPE TOWN BOMBAY

HUMPHREY MILFORD

PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY

SERBIAN GRAMMAR

BY

DRAGUTIN SUBOTIĆ

Ph.D., MUNICH

AND

NEVILL FORBES, M.A.

READER IN RUSSIAN AND THE OTHER SLAVONIC LANGUAGES
IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

OXFORD

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1918



V

PREFACE

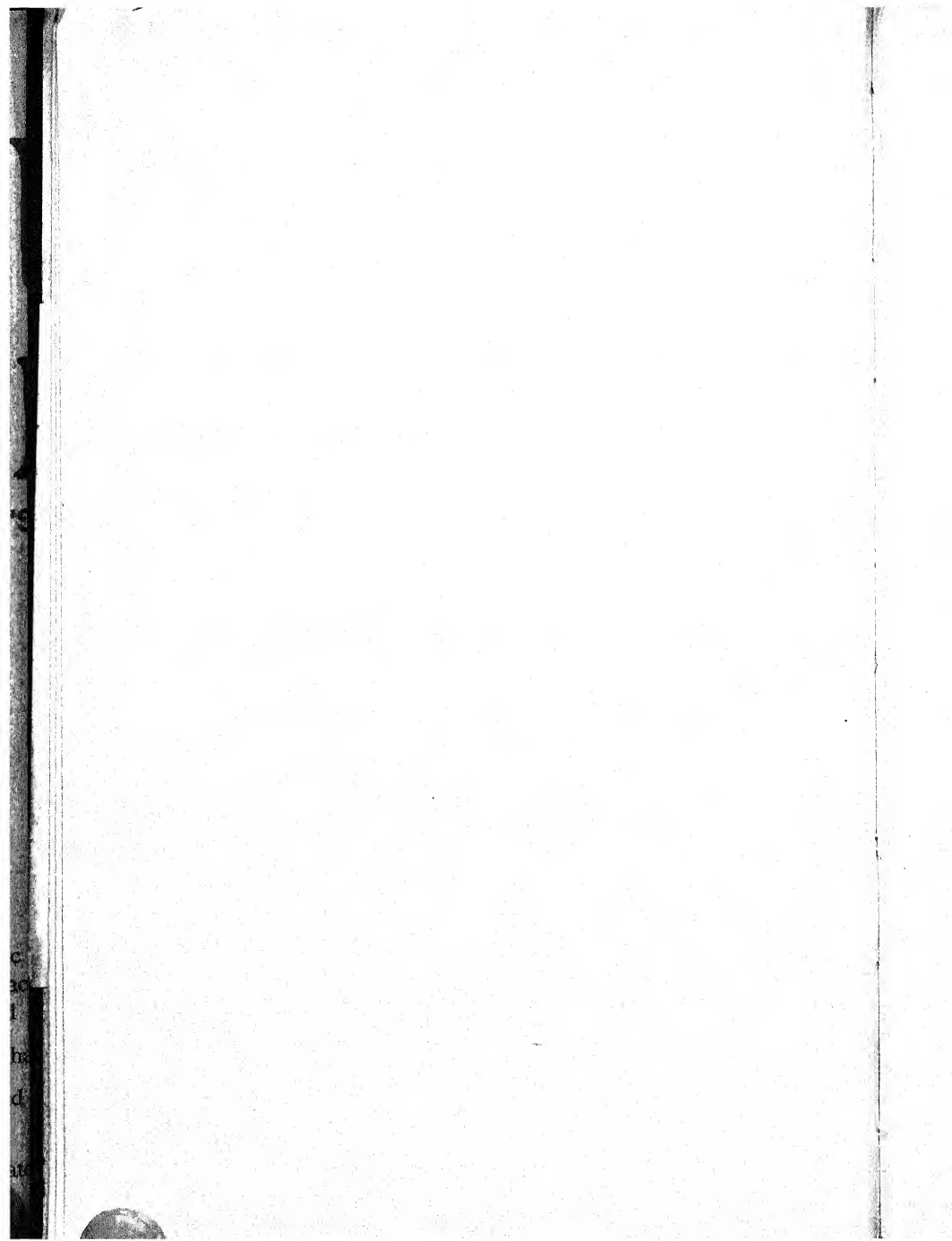
THE title of this book has been chosen for the sake of simplicity. The full name of the language is Serbo-Croatian. It must be emphasized that Croatian, except for slight differences of dialect and vocabulary, is absolutely the same language as Serbian, only written with the Latin alphabet with diacritic signs. Knowledge of both the Cyrillic and Latin (Croatian) alphabets is indispensable to any student of Serbo-Croatian, therefore it is recommended to practise as much as possible the transcription of words written in Cyrillic into Latin, and vice versa.

In the *English* exercises, the sentences have sometimes been framed according to the rules of *Serbian* syntax, in order to accustom the student to its peculiarities.

We wish to thank Mr. Šuvaković for the time and labour he has given us by helping with the accentuation.

D. S.

N. F.



CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	9
1. The Serbian Language	9
2. The Alphabet	10
3. The Pronunciation	14
4. The different kinds of Sounds	15
5. The Accent	20
6. The Dialects	22

PART I

CHAPTER	
1. Easy Pronouns and Nouns	25
2. The Present Tense of <i>to be</i>	31
3. Substantives and the use of the Cases without Prepositions	36
4. Declension of Substantives	44
5. Reading Exercise	51
6. Personal and Demonstrative Pronouns, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to be</i>	54
7. The Past Tense of <i>to be</i>	59
8. Adjectives (and Adjectival Adverbs)	61
9. Declension of Adjectives	64
10. The use of the Possessive Pronouns, and of the Adjectives with the Past Tense of <i>to be</i>	66
11. The Future Tense of <i>to be</i>	73
12. Interrogative and Relative Pronouns, and the use of the Present, Past, and Future of <i>to be</i>	76
13. The Imperative and the Conditional (and the Aorist) of <i>to be</i>	81
14. The Comparative and Superlative of Adjectives	84
15. The use of the Comparative and Superlative, and of the Conditional and Imperative of <i>to be</i>	88
16. The Imperfect and Pluperfect of <i>to be</i>	91
17. The Numerals	92
18. The use of the Numerals	99

CONTENTS

PART II

CHAPTER	PAGE
19. The Verbs: the Formation of the Infinitive and the Present	101
20. Reflexive and Impersonal Verbs	114
21. The Aspects of the Verb: their Meaning and Formation	121
22. Pronouns declined like Adjectives, and the use of the Present Tense of <i>to have</i>	135
23. List of useful Verbs	139
24. The Past Tense (Perfect or Compound Past)	148
25. The Prepositions, and the use of the Present Tense of Verbs	151
26. Definitive Pronouns, and the use of the Present and Past Tenses of the Verbs mentioned in Chapter 23 .	165
27. The Future Tense of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs .	169
28. Indefinite Pronouns and Adverbs	170
29. The use of the Present, Past, and Future Tenses of <i>to have</i> , and of other Verbs	172
30. The Imperative and Conditional of all Verbs	177
31. Adverbs, and the use of the Imperative and Conditional	179
32. The Aorist, Imperfect, and Pluperfect	187
33. Conjunctions and Interjections	189
34. The Participles	194
35. The Order of Words and the Formation of Subordinate Sentences	200
36. Reading Exercise	215
37. Reading Exercise	218
38. Reading Exercise	220

INTRODUCTION

1. THE SERBIAN LANGUAGE

THE Serbian language is one of the Slavonic languages,¹ and therefore also one of the family of Indo-European languages. It is spoken by more than ten millions of Serbs and Croats living in the following countries and territories : the kingdoms of Serbia and Montenegro, Bosnia and Hercegovina, Dalmatia and the islands, Croatia and Slavonia, in parts of Istria and in the former 'Serbian Duchy' (*Srpska Vojvodina*) in Southern Hungary, which includes the districts of purely Serbian nationality, known as *Baranja*, *Banat*, and *Bačka*. There are also large colonies of Serbs and Croats in the United States and in South America.

The language of both Serbs and Croats is, with the exception of inevitable differences of dialect and vocabulary, one and the same ; thus it is customary to speak of it as the *Serbo-Croatian language*. Very closely allied to the Serbo-Croatian language, of which it may be considered almost a dialect, is the language of the one and a half million Slovenes who inhabit the southern parts of the provinces of Styria and Carinthia, the province of Carniola, and the districts of Trieste and Gorica (Gorizia) in Austria. The Serbs, Croats, and Slovenes are all included in the term *Southern Slavs* or *Jugo-Slavs* (*jug*, pronounce *yug* = *south* in Serbian).

The Serbs, being members of the Eastern or Orthodox Church, use the alphabet known as the Cyrillic, the Croats and Slovenes, being Roman Catholics, use the Latin alphabet. The Cyrillic alphabet is also used in Russia and Bulgaria, i.e. by all orthodox

¹ The Slavonic languages fall into three groups, the Eastern (Russian, i.e. Great Russian and Little Russian), the Southern (Bulgarian, Serbo-Croatian, and Slovene), and the Western (Bohemian or Chekh or Czech, Slovak, Polish, and Lusatian-Wendish or Sorbish).

Slavs. The Latin alphabet, as used by the Croats and Slovenes, is the same as that used in England except for the fact that a few consonants have been furnished with diacritic signs to represent certain complex sounds.

The Cyrillic alphabet is so called after St. Cyril, who, with his brother Methodius, converted the Slavs in Moravia in the ninth century, and are known as the 'Slavonic apostles'. The Slavs of the Balkans were actually converted by their disciples. These two missionaries were Greeks of Salonica, but they knew the language of the Balkan Slavs, who at that time were already settled up to within a few miles of Salonica, and St. Cyril is credited with the invention of this alphabet to help the success of his mission, and to enable the Holy Scriptures to be written in the various Slavonic languages. This alphabet is founded on the Greek, but contains a number of letters representing sounds which did not exist in Greek. Some of these letters are supposed to have been borrowed from Semitic sources, others were freshly elaborated.

The foreigner should learn the Cyrillic alphabet, but he must also sooner or later make himself familiar with the language as expressed by the Latin alphabet. A knowledge of both alphabets is essential both from the literary and from the practical points of view.

It may be pointed out that the Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia and Montenegro, &c., is purely phonetic in that each single sign by itself represents one and only one sound in the language, which can hardly be said of any other European alphabet. Conversely, there are no sounds in the language other than those expressed by its alphabet. The same holds good of Croatian, except that one or two double letters are still used.

2. THE ALPHABET

The Cyrillic alphabet as used in Serbia consists of thirty letters. It originally contained more, but was reformed and simplified in the first half of the nineteenth century by the great Serbian philologist and author Vuk Stefanović Karadžić (1787-1864), who, by this means, brought it into complete accord with

the phonetics of the modern spoken language. Being originally founded on the Greek, the order of the letters is mainly that of the Greek alphabet. The Croatian alphabet naturally follows the order of the Latin, but in the accompanying scheme (pages 12 and 13) this order has been altered in order to show the correspondence between it and the Serbian Cyrillic.

The following is the Croatian alphabet in the order of the Latin letters, with the Cyrillic equivalents :

a A	a A	l L	л Л
b B	б Б	lj Lj	љ Љ
c C	ц Ц	m M	м М
č Č	ч Ч	n N	н Н
ć Ć	ћ Ћ	nj Nj	њ Њ
d D	д Д	o O	о О
dž Ć Dž	џ Џ	p P	п П
đ Ć ¹ Đ Gj ħ	ђ Ђ	r R	р Р
e E	е Е	s S	с С
f F	ф Ф	š Š	ш Ш
g G	г Г	t T	т Т
h H	х Х	u U	у У
i I	и И	v V	в В
j J	ј Ј	z Z	з З
k K	к К	ž Ž	ж Ж

It will be seen that in several cases the Croatian Latin alphabet employs double letters or letters with diacritic signs over them where the Serbian Cyrillic constantly employs only one letter. It even has alternative signs to represent certain sounds, the reason being that uniformity of spelling in Croatia has not yet been achieved, while in Serbia it has, e.g. Serbian ħ can be represented in Croatian by gj or đ or dj, of which the first two are the most usual. Of the other alternative signs, lj is commoner than l, nj than n, dž than ģ.

The following is the Serbian alphabet in the order of the Cyrillic letters, with the Latin (Croatian) equivalents, and the cursive script in both alphabets :

¹ Also, less commonly, dj, Dj.

CYRILLIC			LATIN		
Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
1	а А	<i>a A</i>	а А	<i>a A</i>	English <i>a</i> in <i>father</i> .
2	б Б	<i>б Б</i>	б Б	<i>б Б</i>	English <i>b</i>
3	в В	<i>в В</i>	в В	<i>в В</i>	English <i>v</i>
4	г Г	<i>г Г</i>	г Г	<i>г Г</i>	English <i>g</i> in <i>go</i>
5	д Д	<i>д Д</i>	д Д	<i>д Д</i>	English <i>d</i>
6	ђ Ђ	<i>ђ Ђ</i>	đ (dj), Đ gj Dj	<i>đ Đ Dj</i>	{ A sound between the English <i>d</i> in <i>dune</i> and <i>j</i> in <i>John</i>
7	е Е	<i>е Е</i>	е Е	<i>е Е</i>	English <i>e</i> in <i>pet</i>
8	ж Ж	<i>ж Ж</i>	ž Ž	<i>ž Ž</i>	{ English <i>s</i> in <i>pleasure</i> French <i>j</i> in <i>jour</i>
9	з З	<i>з З</i>	z Z	<i>z Z</i>	English <i>z</i>
10	и И	<i>и И</i>	и И	<i>и И</i>	English <i>i</i> in <i>machine</i>
11	ј Ј	<i>ј Ј</i>	ј Ј	<i>ј Ј</i>	English <i>y</i> in <i>yet</i>
12	к К	<i>к К</i>	к К	<i>к К</i>	English <i>k</i>
13	л Л	<i>л Л</i>	л Л	<i>л Л</i>	English <i>l</i>
14	љ Љ	<i>љ Љ</i>	lj Lj	<i>lj Lj</i>	{ English <i>l</i> in <i>million</i> Italian <i>gl</i> in <i>egli</i>
15	м М	<i>м М</i>	м М	<i>м М</i>	English <i>m</i>
16	н Н	<i>н Н</i>	н Н	<i>н Н</i>	English <i>n</i>
17	њ Њ	<i>њ Њ</i>	nj Nj	<i>nj Nj</i>	{ English <i>n</i> in <i>new</i> French <i>gn</i> in <i>Boulogne</i>

CYRILLIC

LATIN

Ord. No.	Printed	Written	Printed	Written	Pronunciation
18	О О	o O	o O	o O	English o in <i>Olivia</i>
19	П П	p P	p P	p P	English p
20	Р Р	r R	r R	r R	Scottish r in <i>merry</i>
21	С С	s S	s S	s S	English ss in <i>glass</i>
22	Т Т	t T	t T	t T	English t
23	ѣ Ѣ	e Ě	é Ě	é Ě	{ A sound between the English t in <i>tune</i> and ch in <i>chalk</i>
24	у У	y Y	u U	u U	
25	ѣ Ѣ	f F	f F	f F	English f
26	х Х	x X	h H	h H	{ Scottish ch in <i>loch</i> , English h (cf. p. 15)
27	ц Ц	ts Ts	c C	c C	English ts in <i>lots</i>
28	ч Ч	ch Ch	č Č	č Č	English ch in <i>chalk</i>
29	ѣ Ѣ	j J	dž, g, Dž	dž Dž	English j in <i>John</i>
30	ш Ш	sh Sh	š Š	š Š	English sh in <i>she</i>

NOTE ON FOREIGN WORDS

Foreign proper names when transliterated in Cyrillic are spelt 'phonetically', e.g.

Shakespeare = Шекспир; *Glasgow* = Глазгоу or Глазгѡв; *William* = Вильям; *John* = Їѡн.

Foreign words as a rule have to conform to the Serbo-Croatian rules of phonetics and orthography, e.g.

professor = прѡфесор; *engineer* = инжйнѣр

3. THE PRONUNCIATION

The pronunciation of Serbo-Croatian is infinitely easier for English-speaking people than is that of any of the other Slavonic languages. The rule in Serbo-Croatian is 'to write as you speak and to speak as you write' (Vuk, cf. p. 10). The pronunciation of each individual letter is in all cases the same, therefore the only difficulty is to learn the value of each letter.

The vowels и, е, а, о, у are all pronounced 'openly' as in Italian, cf. p. 12 f.

The great majority of the consonants also present no difficulty whatever. The only consonants which call for special remark are the following: ш and ж, ч and џ, љ and њ.

ш is a *voiceless*¹ consonant exactly like English *sh*; ж is the corresponding *voiced*¹ consonant pronounced like *s* in the English word *pleasure*, or like *j* in the French word *jour*.

ч is a *voiceless* consonant exactly like English *ch* in *chalk*; џ is the corresponding *voiced* consonant pronounced like *j* in the English word *John*.

The only difficulty is with the two consonants љ and њ, though it is by no means insurmountable. To pronounce these two consonants the teeth must be brought close together and the lips slightly opened. The blade² of the tongue must cleave to the inside of the gums of the upper teeth and be slightly drawn

¹ The difference between a *voiceless* and a *voiced* consonant is that a *voiceless* consonant is pronounced with breath from the mouth *only*, while to pronounce a *voiced* consonant a stream of breath from the chest is necessary.

² The blade is the part of the tongue immediately behind the point and including it.

back at the moment when the stream of breath comes out of the chest through the mouth. The important point is that *h* is a *voiceless* and *ħ* the corresponding *voiced* consonant. Thus *h* and *ħ* correspond to *ч* and *џ* and are very similar to them in sound, only they are palatal consonants,¹ which *ч* and *џ* are not.

The consonant *x* before a consonant, as in *хвала*=*thanks*, is pronounced like *ch* in Scottish *loch*, but before a vowel like an ordinary English *h*, as in *хартѣја*=*paper*.

It is important also to notice the difference between *л* and *љ*, and between *н* and *њ*; *љ* and *њ* are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of *л* and *н*, just as *h* and *ħ* are the *softened* or *palatal* forms of *т* and *д*. Their pronunciation is perfectly easy and natural for English-speaking people except at the end of words, a position in which for that matter these letters in Serbo-Croatian seldom occur; in the middle of words they sound like *l* and *n* in the English words *million* and *new*.

4. THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF SOUNDS

1. Vowels

Besides the five normal vowels—*a*, *e*, *и*, *o*, *y*—*p* can also rank as a vowel when it is (1) between two consonants, or (2) at the beginning of a word before a consonant; in these cases it is strongly rolled as in Scotland, e.g.

1. Србин=*a Serb (masc.)*; трговац=*merchant*; чврст=*firm*.²

2. рђа=*rust*; рвати се=*to wrestle*; рђав=*bad*.

p very seldom occurs as a vowel-sound before or after a vowel; when it does it is indicated by two dots, e.g.

¹ *h* and *ħ*, besides being the result respectively of *т+j* and *д+j* (cf. p. 18), are also the result, in words of comparatively modern formation, of *к+j* and *к+e*, *г+j* and *г+e*, e.g. ћошак=*corner* (from Turkish *kiushk*, cf. *kiosque*, *a pavilion*), Македонија=*Macedonia* (*к+e*), Мађар (also Маџар)=*Magyar*, Ђорђе=*George*, Ѓенерал=*general*, though there is now no *к* or *г* audible in these words.

² Even in words of foreign origin, e.g. трпезарија=*dining-room*, from the Greek *τραπεζαριον*.

грѣце (3 syllables) = *throat* (diminutive).

заѣхати (4 syllables) = *to become rusty*.

All vowels, including *p*, may be either short or long.

‘Movable A’

Particular mention must be made of what is known as the ‘movable a’. In Serbian only the following four groups of consonants are possible at the end of words : *ст, шт, зд, жд* ; when a word would end in any other group than these, an *a* is inserted in the *nom. sing.*, but disappears in the other cases where the word naturally ends in a vowel ; but in the *gen. plur.* the *a* reappears in these words, a phenomenon caused by the fact that the invariable long *final a* of this case is of comparatively modern origin. E.g.

Nom. sing. ко̀нац = *cotton, thread*.

Gen. sing. ко̀нца.

Gen. plur. ко̀наца̃.

It is very frequent in the *nom. sing. masc.* of adjectives, e.g. же́дан (*masc.*) = *thirsty*, but же́дна (*fem.*).

In the case of foreign words practice varies ; thus one finds both факт and факат.

Final л and о

Final *л* of a syllable, and especially of a word, very frequently becomes *о*. In words which originally ended in *-ол* in the *nom. sing.* the two *о*’s then combine into one long vowel, but the *л* reappears in the other cases, e.g.

во̀ (*m.*) = *ox*, *gen. sing.* во̀ла.

сто̀ (*m.*) = *table*, *gen. sing.* сто̀ла.

со̀ = *salt*, *gen. sing.* со̀ли, the *nom. sing.* of which was originally вол, стол, and сол.

In other cases the *л* appears as *о* after another vowel when final, reappearing in other cases, e.g.

бѐо = *white* (*nom. sing. masc.*), but бѐла = *white* (*nom. sing. fem.*), бѐли = *white* (*nom. plur. masc.*). This phenomenon occurs most frequently in the past participle of the verbs, e.g.

има̀о = (*he*) *had* (*masc. sing.*), but има̀ла = (*she*) *had* (*fem. sing.*).

It may also occur in the middle of words when *л* is at the end of a syllable, e.g.

сеѡба = *migration* (originally селба).

владаоца, gen. sing. of владалац = *ruler* (e.g. *king*).

Cf. also Беѡград = *Belgrade* (lit. *the white city*, originally Бел-град).

2. Consonants

The consonants, according to the manner of their articulation, fall into the two groups :

1. Voiced : б, в, г, д, ђ, ж, з, џ.

2. Voiceless : п, ф, к, т, х, ш, с, ч, ц, х.

Rule of the assimilation of Consonants

When a voiced and a voiceless consonant come together, assimilation takes place, i.e. both must be either voiced or voiceless : (1) a voiceless consonant becomes voiced before a voiced consonant, and (2) vice versa, e.g.

(1) свѡдба (*f.*) = *wedding* is derived from сват + ба (свѡт (*m.*) = *wedding guest*)

ѡтацбина (*f.*) = *fatherland* ,, ,, отач + бина (ѡтац (*m.*) = *father*)

(2) српски (*adj.*) = *Serbian* ,, ,, срб + ски (србин (*m.*) = *Serbian* (*m.*))

врапци (*nom. pl.*) = *sparrows* ,, враб + ци (врабац (*m.*) = *sparrow*)

Exceptions : д remains before с and ш, e.g.

председник (*m.*) = *president*.

ѡдшкрѡнути = *to open slightly*.

в never changes into ф and does not change preceding voiceless consonants, e.g.

кѡлѡвка (*f.*) (not колефка) = *cradle*.

клѡтва (*f.*) (not кледва) = *curse*.

MOST IMPORTANT PHONETIC RULES

I. The gutturals к, г, х are 'softened' when followed (1) by е and (2) by и, as follows :

1. (a) Before e, к changes into ч, r into ж, х into ш, in voc. sing. of masculine nouns, e.g.

Nom. sing., вѣк (m.), *wolf*, voc. sing. вѣче.

„ „ бѣг (m.), *god*, „ „ бѣже.

„ „ дѣх (m.), *spirit*, „ „ дѣше.

(b) In the 2nd and 3rd person singular of the aorist tense (cf. p. 187 f.), e.g. рѣки = *to tell*, тргнути = *to pull*.

1st p. рѣкох, *I told*, 2nd and 3rd p. рѣче.

„ тргох, *I pulled*, „ „ трже.

(c) In certain words derived from those ending in these consonants, e.g.

друг (m.), *companion*; дружити се, *to keep company*.

кѣнак (m.), *a hostel*; кѣначити, *to spend the night*.

сѣх (adj.), *dry*; сѣшити, *to dry* (transitive).

2. Before и, r changes into з, к into ц, х into с, in the nom. dat. voc. inst. loc. pl. of most nouns whose stems end in these consonants, e.g.

бѣбрег (m.), *kidney*, nom. voc. pl. бѣбрези, dat. inst. loc. бѣбрезима.

вѣк (m.), *wolf*, nom. voc. pl. вѣци, dat. inst. loc. вѣцима.

сирѣмах (m.), *poor man*, nom. voc. pl. сирѣмаси, dat. inst. loc. сирѣмасима.

II. If ц and з are followed by е or и, they become ч and ж, e.g.

зѣц (m.), *hare (masc.)*, voc. sing. зѣче, зѣчица (f.), *hare (fem.)*.

кнѣз (m.), *prince*, „ „ кнѣже.

ѣтац (m.), *father*, „ „ ѣче.

III. In the case of verbs whose roots end in r, к, and х, these consonants coalesce with the т of the infinitive ending -ти and form ѣ, cf. p. 102.

IV. The palatal consonant j, in such syllables as -ja-, -je-, -ji-, -jy-, affects most of the non-palatal consonants if they immediately precede it. Such consonants coalesce with j into one sound, as follows :

д + j = ѣ, e.g. млѣѣй (adj.) = *younger*, derived from млад + ji¹

т + j = ѣ, e.g. ѣѣй (adj.) = *more angry* „ „ ѣут + ji

¹ -ji is the sign of the comparative.

з + j = ж, e.g. брѣжй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>quicker</i> , derived from брз + ji			
с + j = ш, e.g. кйша (<i>f.</i>) = <i>rain</i>	„	„	кис + ja
ц + j = ч, e.g. ўжичанин (<i>m.</i>) = <i>a native of ўжице</i>	„	„	ужиц + јанин
н + j = њ, e.g. тањй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>thinner</i>	„	„	тан + ji
л + j = љ, e.g. весѣље (<i>n.</i>) = <i>joy</i>	„	„	весел + је
г + j = ж, e.g. дражй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>dearer</i>	„	„	драг + ji
к + j = ч, e.g. јачй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>stronger</i>	„	„	јак + ji
х + j = ш, e.g. тйшй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>quieter</i>	„	„	тих + ji

Further, if such consonants are in their turn preceded by з or с, these become respectively ж and ш, e.g.

грѣд (*m.*) = *bunch of grapes*, but грѣже (*n.*) = *grapes* (collective noun), from грѣже = грѣд-је.

лйст (*m.*) = *leaf, sheet (of paper)*, but лйшке (*n.*) = *leaves* (collective noun), from лйшке = лйст-је.

Бѣсна (*f.*) = *Bosnia*, but Бѣшњак (*m.*) = *a Bosnian (m.)*, from Бѣшњак = Бѣсн-јак.

Further, when the syllables beginning with j are immediately preceded by the consonants б, п, в, м, the letter л is inserted and coalesces with j, forming the consonant љ, e.g.

грѹбљй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>coarser, ruder</i> , derived from грѹб + ji			
скѹплљй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>more expensive, dearer</i>	„	„	скуп + ji
жйвлљй (<i>adj.</i>) = <i>livelier</i>	„	„	жив + ji
бѣзѹмље (<i>n.</i>) = <i>madness</i>	„	„	безум + је

V. Sometimes д and т disappear before ц, ч, and џ, e.g.

Nom. sing. Ѧтац (*m.*), *father*, gen. sing. Ѧца, voc. sing. Ѧче
 „ „ сѹдац (*m.*), *judge*, „ „ сѹца, „ „ сѹче

But in some cases they are left unchanged, as in words which end in -так, e.g.

Nom. sing. почѣтак (*m.*) = *beginning*, nom. pl. почѣтци.

VI. If the groups of consonants эд, ст, шт precede the following consonants: б, к, л, љ, м, н, њ, -д and т are omitted for the sake of euphony, whereupon assimilation takes place, e.g.

рѡзба (*f.*)=*feast*, derived from рѡст+ба (рѡст (*m.*)=*guest*).
мáсна (*adj. f.*, the *masc.* form is мáстан)=*greasy*, derived
from маст+на (мáст (*f.*)=*fat*).

3. Double vowels and double consonants

There are no double vowels or double consonants in Serbo-Croatian.¹ If two identical vowels happen to come together they are each separately pronounced, e.g.

црнѡк=црѡ-ок=*black-eyed*.

пѡрати=по-ѡрати=*to finish ploughing*.

But if they are the result of the lapse of a consonant, they coalesce into one long vowel, e.g.

снâ (*f.*)=*daughter-in-law*, for снâа from снâха. (N.B. the forms снâја and снâха are also used.)

сâт (*m.*)=*watch, hour*, for саат, from сâхат.²

If through assimilation or for any other reason two identical consonants happen to come together one of them is omitted, e.g.

тргнути=*to pull*, ѡтргнути=*to pull away*, from ѡттргнути—ѡдтргнути.

сáдити=*to plant*, расáдити=*to plant about*, from рассадити—разсадити.

5. THE ACCENT

The accent in Serbo-Croatian is musical, and is of four different kinds: there are two long and two short accents.

1. One of the two long is *rising*, marked ' as in вѡно (*n.*)=*wine*; the other is *falling*, marked ˘, as in злâто (*n.*)=*justice*.

There is no difficulty in distinguishing these; in the first the voice rises considerably before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.


 ВИ

The only diphthongs in Serbo-Croatian are those ending in -j, e.g. мѡj=*mine*, крâj (*m.*)=*end*; words such as нâука (*f.*)=*science* are regarded as of three syllables.

Cf. also such words as вѡ, p. 16.

In the second the voice falls considerably before the beginning of the second syllable, e.g.

злѣ́а
a ↘
a
то

2. As for the two short accents, one of them is also *rising*, marked ` , as in село́ (n.) = *village*, жена́ (f.) = *woman* or *wife*; the other is falling, marked ` , as in ку́ха (f.) = *house*, по́ле (n.) = *field*. The difference between these may be illustrated: in the first the voice rises only slightly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

село́, жена́
се ↗ же ↗

In the second the voice falls abruptly before the beginning of the next syllable, e.g.

ку́ха, по́ле
ку́ ↘ по́ ↘
у́ха, о́ле

The difference between these two short accents is clearer when the short falling accent occurs on a word of one syllable, e.g. то́п (m.) = *cannon*.

то́ ↘
оп

Each word can have only one of the four accents. In a word of more than one syllable the accent may come on any syllable except the last, *which is never accented*. Mono-syllabic words can only have one of the falling accents (´, `). The long and the short *rising* accents (´, `) are usually followed by an unaccented syllable. Different forms of the same word, e.g. different cases of the same substantive, may be differently accented, and the accent may shift from one syllable to another, e.g. бѣ́ръ (m.) = *hill*, dat. sing. бѣ́рѣу, nom. pl. бѣ́рови, dat. pl. бѣ́ровѣмъ.

The only words which are not accented are the proclitics¹ and enclitics²; the former preceding and the latter following the

¹ These are the majority of the prepositions, the negative particle не, and such conjunctions as и, а, ни, да.

² These are the shortened forms of the personal and reflexive pronouns, such as ме, те, се, ми, ти, му, га, ъ, and the shortened

accented word, and forming virtually part of it, though in certain phrases the accent may go to a proclitic, when the following word has a falling accent, e.g. *код куће*¹=*at home*, *за дан* (*дѧн*)=*in a day*, in the former of which the preposition *код* takes the accent of the substantive *кућа*, while in the latter the preposition *за* takes the accent of the substantive *дѧн*, but changes it to ° (cf. p. 35).

The unaccented syllables may be either short or long. The long unaccented syllable is marked in the present volume by the sign °, e.g. *време* (*н.*) = *time, weather*, gen. pl. *временѧ*, *лопац* (*м.*) = *pot*, gen. pl. *лопаца*. Such long unaccented syllable (or syllables) always follow the accented syllable and never precede it.

The following is a list of important words which are spelt in the same way and only differentiated by accent :

граѧ= <i>hail</i>	граѧ= <i>town, fortress</i>
друѧа= <i>companion (f.)</i>	друѧа= <i>second (f.)</i>
куѧити= <i>to buy</i>	куѧити= <i>to pick up</i>
гоѧа= <i>wooded hill</i>	гоѧа= <i>worse (f.)</i>
дуѧа= <i>rainbow</i>	дуѧа= <i>long (f.)</i>
раѧити= <i>to feed</i>	раѧити= <i>to wound</i>
сеѧо= <i>village meeting</i>	сеѧо= <i>village</i>
паѧс= <i>dog</i>	паѧс= (1) <i>waist</i> , (2) <i>girdle</i>
баѧба= <i>father</i>	баѧба= <i>grandmother, old woman</i>
враѧа= <i>the door</i>	враѧа= <i>neck</i> (gen. sing.)
каѧа= <i>bath</i>	каѧа or каѧд= <i>when</i>
саѧм= <i>alone (m.)</i>	саѧм= <i>am</i>
сеѧдим= <i>I grow gray</i>	сеѧдим= <i>I sit</i>

6. THE DIALECTS

There are three main dialects : (1) the *što*-dialect, (2) the *kaj*-dialect, and (3) the *ča*-dialect, which are the words for *what* in these three dialects respectively. The first, which is gradually superseding the other two, is spoken over by far the greater part of Serbian and Croatian territory, and is the most beautiful of the forms of the present of бѧти and хѧѧи, and the interrogative particle ли.

¹ But this expression is also frequently accented *код куће*.

three dialects. It is the standard literary language of the Serbo-Croats. The *kaj*-dialect is spoken to the west of Agram and resembles Slovene. The *ča*-dialect is spoken comparatively over a very small area in N. Dalmatia and the islands. The *što*-dialect is divided into three sub-dialects which are differentiated by the threefold pronunciation of the long ē (the old Slavonic ě), namely e, je (or њje), and и. These are accordingly known as the *e*-‘sub’-dialect, the *je*-‘sub’-dialect, and the *u*-‘sub’-dialect (*u*=и), e.g.

e-subd. дѣте (*n.*)=*child*.

je-subd. дијете.

u-subd. дѹте.

The dialect chosen for this book is the *što*(=што)-dialect and its *e*-sub-dialect, which in recent years, at any rate as far as Serbian literature is concerned, has been gaining ground at the expense of the *je*-dialect. The *u*-dialect is used in certain parts of Dalmatia.

The *e*-dialect is spoken and written in almost the whole of the kingdom of Serbia, and in the Serbian districts of Southern Hungary. It is the *modern literary language* of these parts. The *je*-dialect predominates in Bosnia, Hercegovina, Montenegro, Dalmatia, and is the dialect in which the greater part of Serbian literature is written, including all the national epics as edited by Vuk Stefanović Karadžić, and also his classical translation of the Holy Scriptures; it is also the modern literary language of Croatia, Bosnia, Hercegovina, and Montenegro.

But the difference between the two is really small, and one who has mastered the *e*-dialect has no difficulty in understanding the *je*-dialect.

The essential difference is this. The old Slavonic ē (ě) has remained long in certain Serbo-Croatian words, while in others it has become short. Where it is still long the *e*-dialect has e, while the *je*-dialect has њje, the accent on which varies according to that on the same word in the *e*-dialect, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect: сѣно,	<i>je</i> -dialect: сѣјено= <i>hay</i>
рѣка,	ријѣка= <i>river</i>
кољѣвка,	колијѣвка= <i>cradle</i>

Where it has become short the *e*-dialect has *e*, while the *je*-dialect has *je*, the accent remaining the same, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : вѣра,	<i>je</i> -dialect : вјѣра = <i>faith, religion</i>
мѣсто,	мјѣсто = <i>place</i>
сѣдѣм,	сјѣдѣм = <i>I sit</i>

When in such cases *e* is preceded by *л* or *н* the *j* is naturally written in combination with these consonants, e.g.

e-dialect : лѣто, *je*-dialect : љѣто = *summer*

Similarly, when *e* is preceded by *т* or *д*, these consonants appear in the *je*-dialect as *ћ* or *ђ*, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : дѣца,	<i>je</i> -dialect : ђѣца ¹ = <i>children</i>
тѣрати,	ћѣрати ¹ = <i>to drive (transitive)</i>

Finally, when *e* is followed by *о* or *ј*, it becomes *и* in the *je*-dialect, e.g.

<i>e</i> -dialect : дѣо,	<i>je</i> -dialect : дѣо = <i>part</i>
Београд,	Биоград = <i>Belgrade</i>

¹ Though spellings such as дјѣца, тјѣрати, are also found.

PART I

CHAPTER I

EASY PRONOUNS AND NOUNS

§ 1.	òBO = <i>this</i>	tô } òHO }	= <i>that</i>
	òBO je = <i>this is</i>	tô je } òHO je }	= <i>that is</i>
	òBO cy = <i>these are</i>	tô cy } òHO cy }	= <i>those are</i>

These expressions are used, whatever the gender of the object referred to, as follows: òBO je, òBO cy refer to things near the first person, or to the speaker; tò je, tò cy refer to things near the second person, or to the person spoken to; òHO je, òHO cy refer to things which are at a considerable distance from both.

It is important to notice that the English phrases *these are* and *those are* are rendered in Serbian by òBO cy, tò cy, and òHO cy, which literally mean *this are* and *that are*.

§ 2. штā = *what* кò = *who*

In accordance with what has been said above, the answer to the questions

штā je òBO ? = *what is this ?*

кò je òBO ? = *who is this ?*

is usually

tô je = *that is*.

Similarly :

штā je tô ? = *what is that ?*

кò je tô ? = *who is that ?*

are answered by :

òво је = *this is*.

Similarly :

штà је òно ? = *what is that (yonder) ?*

кò је òно ? = *who is that (yonder) ?*

are answered by :

òно је = *that is*.

§ 3. Vocabulary

òво је :

нòж (m.) = *knife*

тањир (m.) = *plate*

слàнйк (m.) = *salt-cellar*

сàлвѣт (m.) = *napkin*

стò (m.) } = *table*

àстàл (m.) }

хлѣб (m.) } = *bread, loaf*

(х)лѣбац (m.) }

бòкàл (m.) = *jug*

кòнац (m.) = *cotton, thread*

прѣст (m.) = *finger*

чàј (m.) = *tea*

шàка (f.) = *handful*

рука (f.) = *hand, arm*

нòга (f.) = *leg*

сòба (f.) = *room*²

мàрама (f.) = *handkerchief*

крàгна (f.) = *collar*

мàшна (f.) = *tie*

кòшуља (f.) = *shirt*

манжѣтна (f.) = *cuff*

плàјвàз (m.) = *pencil*

дйвит (m.) = *inkstand*

сàт (m.) = (1) *watch*, (2) *hour*

чàсòвник (m.) = *watch, clock*

чѣшаљ (m.) = *comb*

кàпѹт (m.) = *coat*

прѣсук (m.) = *waistcoat*

кòверт (m.) = *envelope*

кѹфер (m.) = *trunk*

сàндук (m.) = *wooden box*¹

сйр (m.) = *cheese*

шѣкер (m.) = *sugar*

цйпела (f.) = *boot, shoe*

чàрапа (f.) = *sock, stocking*

чѣтка (f.) = *brush*

сѹкня (f.) = *skirt*

блѹза (f.) = *blouse*

хàљина (f.) = *ladies' dress*

зàвеса (f.) = *curtain*

рукàвица (f.) = *glove*

чàша (f.) = *tumbler*

¹ N.B. *letter-box* = сàндучић за писма.

² N.B. *room* = *space* = мѣсто.

кашника (f.) = spoon ¹	ѱсна or ѱсница (f.) = lip
кашчица (f.) = tea-spoon	кдса (f.) = (1) hair (collective ; a hair = длака), (2) scythe
мърка (f.) = stamp	игла (f.) = needle
хъртија ² (f.) = paper	чйода (f.) = pin
длѡвка (f.) = pencil	брáда (f.) = chin, beard
трѣпавица (f.) = eye-lid	глава (f.) = head
мáстибница (f.) = inkstand	
вйљушка (f.) = fork	
лице (n.) = face	пѣро (n.) = pen
чѣло (n.) = forehead	одѣло (n.) = suit, clothes
ѡко (n.) = eye	дѹгме (n.) = button
ѱво (or ѱхо) (n.) = ear	злáто (n.) = gold
грѣло (n.) = throat	срѣбро (n.) = silver
кдлено (n.) = knee	длoво (n.) = lead
стѡпало (n.) = foot	гвѡжђе (n.) = iron
мáстило (n.) = ink	пíсмо (n.) = letter
	то је :
прѡзор (m.) = window	брйјáч (m.) = razor
зйд (m.) = wall	дѹшек (m.) = mattress
пѡд (m.) } = floor	сáпѹн (m.) = soap
пáтос (m.) }	ѱбрус (m.) }
ѡрмáн (m.) = cupboard	пѣшкйр (m.) }
покрйвáч (m.) = blanket, quilt ³	чйвйлук (m.) = peg, or hook
крѣвет (m.) = bed, bedstead	штáп (m.) = stick
чáршав (m.) = (1) linen sheet, (2) table-cloth	мѣд (m.) = honey
застйрáч (m.) = (1) coloured covering, (2) carpet	дѹвáн (m.) = tobacco
ййлим (m.) = carpet, rug	йáстук (m.) = pillow
умйвáбник (m.) = washstand	зѹб (m.) = tooth
	нѡс (m.) = nose

¹ Other words for *spoon* are ѡжица, жййца, and лáжица.

² *Blotting-paper* = упйјака хъртија (lit. which drinks up).

³ Other words are кáбе (n.) and йѡрган (m.).

фѹруна (f.) = oven
 пѣћ (f.) = stove
 клупа (f.) = form, bench
 табла (f.) = blackboard
 слика (f.) = picture
 кѹтија (f.) = box (smallish)
 корпа (f.) = basket
 лампа (f.) = lamp
 свѣќа (f.) = candle
 столица (f.) = chair
 постелеља (f.) = bedding
 навлака (f.) = pillow-case

цигара (f.) = cigar
 цигарета (f.) = cigarette
 даска (f.) = board, plank
 ватра (f.) = fire
 таваница (f.) = ceiling
 сѣкира (f.) = axe
 вода (f.) = water
 чорба (f.) = soup
 карта (f.) = (1) card, (2) rail-
 way-ticket
 софа (f.) = sofa ¹

огледало (n.) = looking-glass
 стакло (n.) = (1) glass (the
 material), (2) a (glass)
 bottle, ² e.g. of water or wine
 јело (n.) = dish (sc. food),
 anything to eat
 воће (n.) = fruit
 јаје (or јајце) (n.) = egg
 млеко (n.) = milk ³
 месо (n.) = meat

брашно (n.) = flour
 чекмеце (n.) = a drawer ⁴
 слатко (n.) = jam
 масло (n.) = butter (cf. p. 51)
 грозђе (n.) = grapes (collec-
 tive)
 буре (n.) = barrel, cask
 сено (n.) = hay
 пиво (n.) = beer
 вино (n.) = wine

одно је :

војник (m.) = soldier
 официр (m.) = officer
 начелник (m.) = the head
 (e.g. of a district or in-
 stitution)

брод (m.) = (1) ford, (2) ship ⁵
 чамац (m.) = canoe, rowing-
 boat
 мјесец (m.) = (1) moon, (2)
 month

¹ Other words are диван and миндерлук.

² Or флаша.

³ N.B. кисело (masc. кјсео) млеко is the sour milk much drunk in the Near East.

⁴ Another word is фијока.

⁵ Cf. пароброд = steamship.

пра́ља (f.) = <i>laundrywoman</i>	гòстиионица (f.) = <i>restaurant</i> ¹
слу́шкиња (f.) } = <i>house-</i>	ца́ринарница (f.) = <i>custom-</i>
сòбарица (f.) } <i>maid</i>	<i>house</i> ²
по́шта (f.) = <i>the post-office</i>	ста́ница (f.) = <i>station</i>
канцелàрија (f.) = <i>office,</i>	
<i>bureau</i>	

òво су (Plural Nouns): гдè су = *where are?*

но̀сила (n.) = <i>stretcher</i>	дèсни (f.) = <i>gums</i>
у̀ста (n.) = <i>mouth</i>	ча̀кшире (f.) } = <i>trousers</i>
лѐђа (n.) = <i>back</i>	панталóне (f.) }
вра́та (n.) = <i>door</i>	кљéште (f.) = <i>pincers</i>
кòла (n.) = <i>carriage</i>	мàшнице (f.) = <i>tongs</i>
га̀ће (f.) = <i>drawers, pants</i>	са̀днице (f.) = <i>sledge</i>
грѹ̀ди (f.) } = <i>breast, chest</i>	ви́ле (f.) = <i>pitchfork</i>
прèи (f.) }	лèстнице (f.) }
ма̀казе (f.) = <i>scissors</i>	стѹ̀бе (f.) } = <i>ladder</i>
гѹ̀сле (f.) = <i>Serbian one-</i>	мèрдєвине (f.) }
<i>stringed violin</i>	на̀очàри (f.) = <i>spectacles</i>
стèпенице (f.) = <i>stairs</i>	љѹ̀ди (m.) = <i>men, people</i>
нòвине (f.) = <i>newspaper</i> ³	терàзнје = <i>weighing-scales</i>

Reading Exercise

1. Òво је стò, тò је сàт, а òно је ча̀ша.
2. Òвде је нòж, тѹ́ је та̀њир, а òнде је хлèб.
3. Òвде су ка̀пѹт и прèслук, тѹ́ су ма̀рама и кра̀гна, а òнде су кòшуља и ма̀нжèтне.
4. Гдè је нòж?—Òвде (је).
5. Гдè је та̀њир?—Тѹ́ (је).
6. Гдè је хлèб?—Òнде (је).
7. Гдè су ка̀пѹт и прèслук?—Òвде (су).
8. Гдè су кòшуља и ма̀нжèтне?—Òнде (су).
9. Чèтка за кòсу.
10. Чèтка за одèло.
11. Чèтка за зѹ̀бе.
12. Чèтка за ципеле.
13. Чèтка за шèшѹр.

¹ Or *restoràn*, cf. also p. 52.

² ца̀рина = *toll* or *custom* or *duty*.

³ *One number of a newspaper* = *јèдан брòј нòвинà* or *јèдне нòвине*; N.B. *news* = *новина*.

14. Хартѣја и кѡверт. 15. Мѣрка за писмо. 16. Пѡштанске мѣрке. 17. Мѣстило је у мѣстиѡници. 18. Хартѣја је у кѡверту. 19. Чѣршав зѣ стѡ. 20. Чѣршав за крѣвет. 21. Застѣрач зѣ стѡ (ог за крѣвет, ог зѣ пѡд (пѡтос)). 22. Тѣлим је на пѡду. 23. Пѣшкѣр је на ѡмиваѡнику. 24. Слѣка је на зѣду. 25. Лѣмпа и свѣќа су на стѡлу. 26. Вѡда је у бѡкалу. 27. Бѡкал за вѡду. 28. Бѣре за вѣно. 29. Јѣгње је ѱ дворѣшту. 30. Кѡњ и тѣле су ѱ пољу.

Notes

2. ѡвде=*here*, тѣ=*there*, ѡнде=*there (yonder)*. 3. и=*and*, а=*and* or *but*. 4. гдѣ=*where*. 9. за=*for*. 16. =*postage stamps*. 17. у=*in*. 22. на=*on*.

CHAPTER 2

THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

THE verbs бѣти = *to be*, and хтѣти = *to wish, to want, to be willing*, in Serbian have two functions. In the first place they are used in their literal meaning, and in the second as auxiliary verbs: (1) бѣти corresponding to the English verb *to have*, (2) хтѣти corresponding to the English *shall and will*.

The personal pronouns are:

ја = <i>I</i>	ми = <i>we</i>	
ти = <i>thou</i>	ви = <i>you</i>	
ѡн = <i>he</i>	ѡни (m.)	} = <i>they</i>
ѡна = <i>she</i>	ѡне (f.)	
ѡно = <i>it</i>	ѡна (n.)	

The second person ти is always used in Serbian amongst relatives and intimate friends of the same age, and by all country people under all circumstances, but its use is not to be recommended to foreigners.

БѢТИ

This verb has in the present a *full* and a *short* form :

Present tense

(a) Full form :

- | | |
|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. (jâ) jècam = <i>I am</i> | (mî) jècmo = <i>we are</i> |
| 2. (tî) jèci = <i>thou art</i> | (vî) jècte = <i>you are</i> |
| 3. (òh) jèct = <i>he is</i> | (òhi) jècy |
| (òha) jèct = <i>she is</i> | (òhe) jècy |
| (òho) jèct = <i>it is</i> | (òha) jècy |
- } = *they are*

(b) Short form :

In practice the commonest form of the verb is a shortened one, consisting of the personal pronoun and the second half of the verb form, *except* in the 3rd person sing., where the last two letters of the verb form are omitted :

- | | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. jâ cam = <i>I am</i> | mî cmo = <i>we are</i> |
| 2. tî ci = <i>thou art</i> | vî cte = <i>you are</i> |
| 3. òh je = <i>he is</i> | òhi cy (m.) |
| òha je = <i>she is</i> | òhe cy (f.) |
| òho je = <i>it is</i> | òha cy (n.) |
- } = *they are*

The use of the Personal Pronouns

Generally the personal pronouns are omitted with all verbs unless emphasis is laid on them, but they are always retained with these shortened forms of the present tense of БѢТИ.

Questions

The *interrogative* is formed by putting the interrogative particle *ли* immediately after the full verb forms, but in the 3rd person sing. after the short form : jè ли ? If the pronoun is not omitted its place is after the interrogative particle :

јѐсам ли (ја) ? = *am I ?*

јѐ ли (ѐн, ѐна, ѐно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

јѐте ли (ви) ? = *are you ?*

јѐу ли (ѐни, ѐне, ѐна) ? = *are they ?*

A more emphatic form of the interrogative is that introduced by the conjunction *зѐ*, which has no exact English equivalent ; it expresses surprise or incredulity :

зѐ сам ја ? ! = *am I really ? !*

зѐ је ѐн, ѐна, ѐно ? ! = *is he, she, it ? !*

зѐ смо ми ? ! = *are we ? !*

зѐ су ѐни, ѐне, ѐна ? ! = *are they ? !*

Questions can also be asked by means of the conjunction *да* followed by the interrogative particle *ли* ; both are then put before the short verb form, and the personal pronoun, if it is used, is placed after the verb, e.g.

да ли сам (ја) ? = *am I ?*

да ли је (ѐн, ѐна, ѐно) ? = *is he, she, it ?*

да ли сте (ви) ? = *are you ?*

да ли су (ѐни, ѐне, ѐна) ? = *are they ?*

This expression corresponds to the French idiom : *est-ce que . . . ?*

In practice, however, questions are very frequently asked without using any of these particles, and then the verb is used in its affirmative form, i.e. pronoun first and verb second, emphasis being laid on the verb, and the voice being raised to indicate that it is a question ; the question is asked in the form of an assumption, e.g.

ви сте Срѐбин ? = *you are a Serbian ?*

The other forms are :

јѐте ли ви Срѐбин ? } = *are you a Serbian ?*
 да ли сте ви Срѐбин ? }

зѐр сте ви Срѐбин ? ! = *are you really a Serbian ?*

It is to be noticed that, when the sentence begins with an interrogative pronoun or adverb such as *кѡлико* = *how much*, *how many*, *кѡд* = *when*, *гдѣ* = *where*, *кѡ* = *who*, *штѧ* = *what*, no interrogative particle is necessary, e.g.

кѡ сте вѣ ? = *who are you ?* *штѧ сте вѣ ?* = *what are you ?*

Negations

The *negative* is formed by prefixing the short forms with the negative particle *ни* (originally *не је*), e.g.

- | | | |
|------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------|
| 1. (јѧ) нѣсам = <i>I am not</i> | (мѣ) нѣсмо = <i>we are not</i> | |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣси = <i>thou art not</i> | (вѣ) нѣсте = <i>you are not</i> | |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣје = <i>he is not</i> | (ѡни) нѣсу | } = <i>they are not</i> |
| (ѡна) нѣје = <i>she is not</i> | (ѡне) нѣсу | |
| (ѡно) нѣје = <i>it is not</i> | (ѡна) нѣсу | |

Sometimes the negative is combined with an interrogation, in which case the verb is placed first, the interrogative particle *ли* second, and the pronoun, if required, last, e.g. *нѣсам ли (јѧ) ?* = *am I not ?* ! *нѣсте ли вѣ ?* ! = *are you not ?* !

If such questions are asked in a tone of surprise or incredulity they can be preceded by *зѧр*, cf. p. 33, e.g.

зѧр нѣсте вѣ Ёнглѣз ? ! = *are you not an Englishman !*

нѣсам, јѧ сам Америкѧнац = *no, I am not ; I am an American.*

Note. There is another form of the present tense of this verb which is *only* used in subordinate clauses, and comes to have the meaning of a future ; it is known as the *perfective present* (or exact future), and its use implies the completion of an action in the future (cf. pp. 170, 185) :

- | | | |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------|---------------------|
| 1. (јѧ) бѣдѣм = <i>I am (I be)</i> | (мѣ) бѣдѣмо = <i>we are</i> | |
| 2. (тѣ) бѣдѣш = <i>thou art</i> | (вѣ) бѣдѣте = <i>you are</i> | |
| 3. (ѡн) бѣдѣ = <i>he is</i> | (ѡни) бѣдѣ | } = <i>they are</i> |
| (ѡна) бѣдѣ = <i>she is</i> | (ѡне) бѣдѣ | |
| (ѡно) бѣдѣ = <i>it is</i> | (ѡна) бѣдѣ | |

The use of this tense is illustrated on p. 170.

Reading Exercise

1. Ћста су на лицу. 2. Прѳзор и врата су у зиду.
 3. Чај и шећер. 4. Чај са шећером. 5. Чај без
 шећера. 6. Вафра гори. 7. Вафра не гори. 8. Ја
 сам официр. 9. Ти си војник. 10. Он је начелник.
 11. Где је начелство? 12. Слика је на прѳзору. 13.
 Скѳла је на реци. 14. Звѳзде су на небу.¹ 15. Типе су
 на трави. 16. Јагње и прѳсе су на њвору. 17. Ципеле
 су под крѳетом. 18. Во је на брду.¹ 19. Лађа је на
 јѳзеру. 20. Општина је близу цркве и шкѳле. 21.
 Куће је на улици.¹ 22. Ми смо офицари. 23. Ви сте
 војници. 24. Они су начелници. 25. Коњ и во су на
 куприји. 26. Где су кола? — Ђно ог ѳто их² ~~су~~ (ог су).
 27. Где су маказе? — Ђво их² ~~су~~ (ог су). 28. Где су ѳста?
 — На лицу. 29. Где је нѳс? — На лицу. 30. Машице
 су код ватре.¹ 31. Брд је на мѳру.¹ 32. Брд је у
 пристаништу. 33. Где је брд? — На мѳру (ог у приста-
 ништу). 34. Кутија је у корпи. 35. Цигарѳте су на
 столу. 36. Где су цигарѳте? — На столу.

Notes

4. са=*with*. 5. бѳз=*without*. 6. гори=*burns*. 7. не
 гори=*does not burn*. 17. пѳд=*under*. 20. близу=*near*.
 26. ѳто=*there is, there are*; ѳно=*there is, there are (yonder)*,
 the French *voilà*. 27. ѳво=*here is, here are*, the French *voici*.
 30. код=*near (or at the house of)*=the French *chez*.

¹ Besides на небу, на брду, на улици, код ватре, на мѳру,
 accentuations such as на нѳбу, на брду, на улици, код ватре,
 на мѳру are very frequent (cf. p. 22).

² их, gen. pl. of ѳне and ѳна (cf. p. 54). After the interjec-
 tions ѳво, ѳто, ѳно, which are used in the same way as ѳво, тѳ,
 ѳно (cf. p. 25), the *genitive* is used. But phrases such as ѳво
 су кола=*here is the carriage*, ѳто (ѳно) су маказе=*there are*
the scissors, are contracted from ѳво, ѳвде су кола and ѳто
 (ѳно), ѳнде су маказе.

CHAPTER 3

SUBSTANTIVES

(and the use of the cases without prepositions)

THERE is no article in the Serbian language, either definite or indefinite, e.g.

цвѣт (*m.*) = (1) *a flower*, or (2) *the flower*.

сѡба (*f.*) = (1) *a room*, or (2) *the room*.

дѣте (*n.*) = (1) *a child*, or (2) *the child*.

There are three genders: masculine, feminine, and neuter; and seven cases: (1) nominative, (2) genitive, (3) dative, (4) accusative, (5) vocative, (6) instrumental, (7) locative (or prepositional¹).

Besides the singular and the plural there is also a dual number, which is preserved nowadays in a few words (cf. pp. 40, 47, 49, 50).

In Serbian not only all substantives, but also all pronouns and adjectives, and certain numerals, are declined.

Nouns and adjectives, the nominative of which ends in a consonant, are usually masculine, those ending in o or e are almost all neuter, while those ending in a are mostly feminine.

There are three different declensions of substantives.

To the *first* belong all the masculine nouns, *except* those ending in the nom. sing. in -a. In the nom. sing. they end either in a consonant or in -o, or -e; in the gen. sing. they end in -a, e.g. прозор = *window*, сѡн = *son*, коњ = *horse*, нѡж = *knife*, Мѡрко = *Mark*, Пѡвле = *Paul*, вѡ² = *ox*, сѡко² = *falcon*, пѡцао² = *business, job*, cf. pp. 44 ff.

¹ So called because never used except with a preposition.

² These originally ended in -п, cf. p. 16.

To the *second* belong all feminine nouns, and those masculine nouns ending in -a in the nom. sing. just mentioned. The great majority of feminine nouns end in -a in the nom. sing.; a certain number end in a consonant, very few end in -o, such as мѣао¹ = *idea, thought*, со¹ = *salt*, and two irregular feminine nouns end in -и, viz. матери = *mother*, and дѣти = *daughter*.

Those ending in -a, feminine as well as masculine, have in the gen. sing. -е; those ending in a consonant have in the gen. sing. -и (cf. pp. 46-48).

The word доба = *time*, though ending in -a, is neuter, but is not declined (cf. p. 161).

Examples : жена (f.) = (1) *woman*, (2) *wife*, душа (f.) = *soul*, стѣп (f.) = *thing*, слѣга (m.) = *man-servant*, cf. pp. 46 ff.

To the *third* belong all the neuter nouns; these end in the nom. sing. in -o or -e, and in the gen. sing. in -а. Some of them insert in the gen. sing. the syllable -ен or -ет before -а.

Examples : село = *village*, поле = *field*, плѣме = *tribe*, дѣгме = *button*, cf. pp. 49 ff.

1. In the singular, the dative and the locative of all substantives are the same, while in the plural the dative, instrumental, and locative are all the same, but in both numbers feminine endings are different from those of the masculine and neuter.

2. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to an *animate* or a once animate being is the same as the gen. sing. The acc. sing. of all masculine nouns which refer to *inanimate* things is the same as the nom. sing.

3. Both in the singular and in the plural of all neuter nouns the nominative, accusative, and vocative are the same.

¹ These originally ended in -и, cf. p. 16.

4. The nominative, accusative, and vocative plural of all feminine nouns are the same.

5. The nominative and vocative plural of all masculine nouns are the same.

The following are a few of the commonest substantival suffixes :

1. Masculine

ај, nouns derived from verbs, e.g. положеј = *position*, from положить = *to place*.

-ар, to denote agents, e.g. столар = *carpenter*, from сто = *table*.

-ин, to denote origin, religion, profession, e.g. Јевреин = *Jew*, Бугарин = *a Bulgar (m.)*, cf. p. 46.

-ник, denoting agents, e.g. уметник = *artist*, from умети.

-тељ, to denote agents, e.g. пријатељ = *friend*.

-ић, the masculine diminutive, e.g. момчић = *a little boy*; this is particularly common in surnames, implying 'son', e.g. Поповић, the common surname Роговић: поп = *priest*¹, попов = *belonging (masc.) to the priest* (cf. p. 63).

-ак, or -јак, e.g. устанак = *rebellion*, from устати = *to rise*, момак = *a young man*, Бошњак = *a Bosnian (masc.)*.

-ац, e.g. трговац = *merchant*, Херцеговац = *a man from Hercegovina*, Далматинац = *a Dalmatian (m.)*, Црногорац = *a Montenegrin (m.)*.

-џија (Turkish), to denote profession, e.g. кавџија = *innkeeper*, also мехџија.

-лук (Turkish), to denote locality or use, e.g. миндџерлук = *sofa*, прџлук = *waistcoat* ('breast-piece').

¹ N.B. a more reverent term is свѣштенник.

2. Feminine

- ница, denoting origin, religion, profession, &c., e.g.
Грѣкиња = *a Greek woman*, from Грѣк = *a Greek*.¹
- ица, denoting agents, e.g. пријатељица = *friend*; also
places, e.g. чекабница = *waiting-room*, читабница =
reading-room.
- ка, denoting female beings, e.g. девојка = *girl*, cf. девој-
чица = *a little girl*.
- ад, feminine collectives, e.g. мѡмчад = *the young boys*.
- ост, for abstract nouns, e.g. радѡст = *joy*, уметност = *art*.
- ина, for derivative nouns of various kinds, e.g. ѡтаѡбина =
fatherland, телетина = *veal*, планина = *mountain*.
- ска, for names of countries, e.g. Бугарска = *Bulgaria*,
Турска = *Turkey*, Угарска = *Hungary* (also Маѡарска),
Швајцарска = *Switzerland*.
- ија, for names of countries, e.g. Албанија (or Арбанија) =
Albania,² Румѡнија = *Rumania*,³ Аустрија = *Austria*.

3. Neuter

3. Neuter *foliage*
 -je, for collective nouns, e.g. *collection of* лишће = leaves, from лист = a leaf, *collection of* камене = stones, from камен = a stone.
 -ство, for abstract nouns, e.g. богатство = wealth.
 -ње, for verbal nouns, e.g. уједињење = unification, *practice* вежбање = practice, *property* имање = property.

The use of the cases without Prepositions

(For their use *with* prepositions, cf. pp. 153 ff.)

The *nominative* is used as in other languages, but for foreigners it is very important to remember that the *vocative* must always be used in addressing anybody, e.g. Дѣбар дан,

¹ *Greece* = Гръчка.

² *An Albanian* = Арнаутин.

³ *A Rumanian* = Рѹмѹн.

господине Подовићу! = *good morning, Mr. Popović!*, добро вече, госпођо (or госпођице) = *good evening, Madame (or Mademoiselle)*. N.B. in addressing ladies the surname is most frequently omitted; otherwise Mrs. Popović is: госпођа Подовић or Подовићка; Miss Popović: госпођица Подовић or Подовићева, of which the shorter forms are preferred, and also are usually not declined.

The *genitive* is used as follows :

1. To denote possession, when the name of the owner is qualified in any way, e.g. то је књига мога брата = *that is the book of my brother*; otherwise possessive adjectives very often take its place, e.g. то је братовљева књига = *that is the (sc. my) brother's book*.

2. After expressions denoting a quantity of anything, e.g. кôмâд меса = *a piece of meat*, парче шећера (or хлеба) = *a piece of sugar (or bread)*, фûнта маъсла = *a pound of butter*, пòла фûнте чаја = $\frac{1}{2}$ lb. of tea, мнòго љúдû = *many people*, маъло нòвца = *little money*, хòћете ли сýра? = *do you want any cheese?* ìмâ ли вòћа? = *is there any fruit?*

3. In negative sentences, especially after the verb нѣмати (cf. p. 111), e.g. нѣмâм срѣће = *I have no luck*, нѣма вîна = *there is no wine*, нѣма нîкога = *there is no one*, but N.B. нѣма нîшта = *there is nothing*.

4. To denote the quality of anything, e.g. хòтел првога рѣдâ = *a hotel of the first class*, кâрта друге клâсе = *ticket of the second class*, чòвек нîског рâста = *a man of low stature*, брзих нòгу (gen. of dual) = *of fast legs*, вредних рýкû (gen. of dual) = *having strong hands (sc. industrious)*.

5. In expressions of time, e.g. òве нòћи = *this night* (either last or next), свâкога дâна = *every day*, прòшле (ìдýће) гòдине (нѣдеље) = *last (next) year (week)*, прòшлог (ìдýћег)

месеца = *last (next) month* ; for expressions of the *date* and the *time of day*, cf. p. 98 f.

The *dative* is used :

1. To show direction, e.g. идемо кући = *we are going home*.
2. In such expressions as : дајте му ђву књигу = *give him this book*, пишите ми често = *write to me often*, пружите ми со = *pass me the salt*, реците им = *tell them*.
3. Possession, e.g. отац му је болестан = *his father is ill*, колико вам је годинā ? = *how old are you ?*
4. In impersonal expressions, cf. pp. 115 ff.

The *accusative* is used as follows :

1. After transitive verbs as in other languages, e.g. читам књигу = *I am reading a book*.
2. In expressions of space, time, &c., e.g. остаћу овде недељу (месец, годину, all these frequently followed by данā, lit. *of days*) = *I shall stay here a week (a month, a year)*, два планина је висока хиљаду и две стотине метāрā = *this mountain is 1,200 metres high*, сваки (цео) дан = *every (the whole) day*, сваку (целу) ноћ = *every (the whole) night*.
3. In impersonal expressions, e.g. стид ме је = *I am ashamed*, also срамòта ме је (cf. chap. 20), lit. *shame me is*.

The *instrumental* is used as follows :

1. To denote the instrument or the means by which anything is done, e.g. не могу да сечем ђвим тупим нòжем = *I cannot cut with this blunt knife*, путòваћемо лāћом до Београда па ђдāнде вòзом (ог жёлезницом или ко̀лима) до Крагујёвца = *we shall travel by steamer to Belgrade and thence by rail or by carriage to Kragujevac*.
2. To denote direction, e.g. јāшем пољем = *I am riding through the field*, идемо ўлицом = *we are going along the street*.

3. To denote manner, e.g. *jašem kâsom* = *I am riding at a trot*, *он ђде трком* = *he went off* (aorist from *отѣти*, cf. p. 188) *at a run*, *они гдворе шапѣтом* = *they are speaking in a whisper*, *ѣдите рѣдом* = *go in turn, one after the other*.

4. In certain expressions of time, e.g. *недѣлом* (N.B. inst. sing.) = *on Sundays*, *ноћу* = *by night*, on the analogy of which has also been formed *дѣну* = *by day*.

5. To denote comparison (mostly in poetry, instead of *као + nom.*), e.g. *вѣлим љмрѣти нѣго рѣбѣм жѣвети* = *I prefer to die than to live as a slave*.

The *locative* is used only after prepositions, cf. pp. 157, 159.

Reading Exercise

Како се каже на српском¹ *hand*?

Како се зове на српском *hand*?

Како се српски² каже (ог зове) *hand*?

} What is the
Serbian
for *hand*?

Молим вас, *please* (lit. *I beg you*); дајте ми, *give me*; пружите ми, *pass me*; донесите ми, *bring me*; купите ми, *buy me*; хвала вам ог фала вам, *thank you*; хвала, *thanks*³; хвала (ог фала) лепо, *thank you (nicely)*; велика вам хвала ог велико вам хвала, *thank you very much*; много вам хвала, *many thanks*.

Знате ли? *do you know*? знам, *I do (know)*; не знам, *I don't know*; кажите ми, *tell me*; извините ме ог опрѣстите ми, *excuse me, I beg your pardon*.

Како сте? *How do you do*? Врло добро, хвала, *Thanks, very well*. Како сте ви? *How are you*? Нисам добро ог није ми добро, *I am not well*. Не деѣхам се добро, *I don't feel well*. Шта вам је? *What is the matter with you*? Болѣ ме глава, *I have a headache*. Болѣ ме зѣб, *I have*

¹ Sc. *језику* (*language*), 'on Serbian'.

² Is an adverb, 'Serbian fashion'.

³ Lit. *praise*.

toothache. Бòли ме нòга, *My leg hurts (me)*. Бòли ме стòмак, *My stomach aches* (cf. p. 41).

Дòбар дàн ! *good day* ! дòбро јутро ! *good morning* ! дòбро вèче ! *good evening* ! лàку нòћ¹ ! ог дòбру нòћ ! *good night* ! збòгом,² *good-bye*, дò виђèњà, *till we meet again*. Кудà кèте ог кудà идèте ? *Where are you going* ? Дòђите к мèни, *Come to me*. Ђдите овàмо ог дòђите овàмо, *Come here*. Мòлим вас, чèкàјте мàло, *Please wait a little*. Хàјде ог àјде, *Come along (thou)*, хàјдете, *come along here (you)*, хàјдемо, *let us go*.

1. Мòлим вас, донèсите ми вòде (вìна, шèкèра, хлèба, &c.). 2. Мòлим вас, гдè је нàчелство (ог полициjа ог хòтел А) ? 3. Донèсите ми, мòлим вас, слàник и сàлвèт. 4. Мòлим, пружите ми хлèб. 5. Гдè су кòла, мòлим ? Пред хòтелом. 6. Мòлим вас знàте ли гдè сèди³ (ог стàнуjе⁴), дòктор В ? Опрдèтите, нè знàм. 7. Кàжите ми, мòлим вас, кàко се зòве òво jèло ? 8. Знàте ли кàко се зòве òно сèло (ог òва вàрош) ?

Important notes

In Serbian two and even three negative words are often necessary in a negative phrase, where in English only one is required, e.g.

òн нè чуjе = *he does not hear*.

òн нìкàд нè чуjе = *he never hears*.

òн нìкàд нìштà нè чуjе = *he never hears anything*.

нè = *not*.

нìкàд (*adv.*) = *never*.

нìштà (*pron.*) = *nothing*.

¹ *Acc., sc. жèлим вам = I wish you.*

² *From с Богом = with God.*

³ *Lit. sits, sc. lives, from сèдети.*

⁴ *Lives, resides, from станòвати.*

CHAPTER 4

DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES

I. Declension

(MASCULINE NOUNS, EXCEPT THOSE IN -A)

STEMS in ж, љ, ј, љ, њ, ѣ, ч, ц, ш are called *soft*, the rest *hard*. The stem is found by cutting off the final vowel of the gen. sing.

A. Examples of soft stems : кѡњ = *horse*, нѡж = *knife*.

Sing. Nom.	кѡњ	нѡж
Gen.	кѡња	нѡжа
Dat.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Acc.	кѡња	нѡж
Voc.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Inst.	кѡњем	нѡжем
Loc.	кѡњу	нѡжу
Pl. Nom.	кѡњи	нѡжеви
Gen.	кѡња	нѡжева
Dat.	кѡњима	нѡжевима
Acc.	кѡње	нѡжеве
Voc.	кѡњи	нѡжеви
Inst.	кѡњима	нѡжевима
Loc.	кѡњима	нѡжевима

B. Examples of hard stems : прѡзор = *window*, сѡн = *son*

Sing. Nom.	прѡзор	сѡн
Gen.	прѡзора	сѡна
Dat.	прѡзору	сѡну
Acc.	прѡзор	сѡна
Voc.	прѡзоре	сѡне
Inst.	прѡзором	сѡном
Loc.	прѡзору	сѡну

Pl. Nom.	прѣзори	сѣнови
Gen.	прѣзѣрѣ	синѣвѣ
Dat.	прѣзорима	синѣвима
Acc.	прѣзоре	сѣнове
Voc.	прѣзори	сѣнови
Inst.	прѣзорима	синѣвима
Loc.	прѣзорима	синѣвима

The insertion of the syllable -ов- or -ев- in the plural of the masculine nouns occurs most frequently in nouns of one syllable,¹ but no absolute rule can be given ; sometimes its use is optional, e.g. вѣци (cf. p. 18) or вѣкови = *the wolves*, but N.B. only вѣкѣвѣ = gen. pl.

The differences in the declension of nouns with soft and of those with hard stems are : (1) in the singular, those with soft stems have in the vocative -y instead of -e, and in the instrumental -ем instead of -ом ; (2) in the plural, the monosyllabic nouns with soft stems have in the nominative -ев instead of -ов.

Masculine nouns ending in the nom. sing. in -o and -e have the same inflections, e.g. сѣко (stem : сокол-, cf. p. 16) = *falcon*, Пѣвѣ = *Paul*, Мѣрко = *Mark*.

Sing. Nom.	сѣко	Pl. сѣколи or сѣколови
Gen.	сѣкола	сѣкѣлѣ or соколѣвѣ
Dat.	сѣколу	сѣколима or соколѣвима
Acc.	сѣкола	сѣколе or сѣколове
Voc.	сѣколе	сѣколи or сѣколови
Inst.	сѣколом	сѣколима or соколѣвима
Loc.	сѣколу	сѣколима or соколѣвима

¹ This inserted syllable is a relic of an old declension which is now lost, and is an intruder in most of the words in which it now occurs.

Nom.	Павле	Марко
Gen.	Павла	Марка
Dat.	Павлу	Марку
Acc.	Павла	Марка
Voc.	Павле	Марко
Inst.	Павлом	Марком
Loc.	Павлу	Марку

Nouns denoting nationality, citizenship, religion, or profession, ending in the nom. sing. in -ин, lose н in the plural and are then declined like *про́зори*, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	Србин = <i>a Serbian (m.)</i>	Nom. Pl.	Срби.
„ „	Београђанин = <i>a native of Belgrade (m.)</i>	„ „	Београђани
„ „	бёрберин = <i>barber</i>	„ „	бёрбери.
„ „	хришћанин = <i>Christian</i>	„ „	хришћани

Nouns in -ац lose the а after the nom. sing., e.g. *Не́мац* = *a German (m.)*, nom. pl. *Не́мци*, cf. p. 16.

II. Declension

(FEMININE, AND MASCULINE NOUNS IN -а)

In this declension the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the first, but there are no differences in declension.

A. Example of a soft stem : *ду́ша* = *soul*.

Sing. Nom.	ду́ша	ду́ше
Gen.	ду́ше	ду́ша̃
Dat.	ду́ши	ду́шама
Acc.	ду́шу	ду́ше
Voc.	ду́шо	ду́ше
Inst.	ду́шом	ду́шама
Loc.	ду́ши	ду́шама

B. Example of a hard stem : жѣна = *woman*.

Sing. Nom.	жѣна	жѣне
Gen.	жѣне	жѣнѧ
Dat.	жѣни	жѣнама
Acc.	жѣну	жѣне
Voc.	жѣно	жѣне
Inst.	жѣнѡм	жѣнама
Loc.	жѣни	жѣнама

Feminine nouns in -ица, such as гдѣпоѣица = *young lady*, *Miss*, домѧѣица = *hostess*, *matron* (masc. домѧѣин), have in the voc. sing. е, e.g. гдѣпоѣице, домѧѣице.

What has been said on p. 16 explains such forms as, e.g. nom. sing. дѣвојка = *girl* (stem девојк-), gen. pl. дѣвојкѧ; nom. sing. ѡвца = *a sheep* (stem ѡвц-), gen. pl. ѡвѧцѧ.

Sometimes the ending а in the gen. pl. is replaced by и, on the analogy of the declension of ствѧр (cf. p. 48), e.g. nom. sing. бѡрба = *fighting* (stem борб-), gen. pl. бѡрбѣи; nom. sing. мѡлба = *petition* (stem молб-), gen. pl. мѡлбѣи.

The nouns нѡга and рѣка have gen. *dual*: нѡгѣ and рѣкѣ, cf. p. 40.

Masculine nouns in -а are declined like жѣна and дѣша.

In the dative and locative sing. of this declension the gutturals к, г, х, do not always change to ц, з, с, before и, cf. p. 18. When they occur in the groups тк, чк, and зг, and also in proper names, they remain unchanged, e.g.

Nom. Sing.	тѣтка = <i>aunt</i>	Dat. тѣтки (not тетци)
„ „	мѧзга = <i>mule</i>	„ мѧзги (not маззи)
„ „	мѧчка = <i>cat</i>	„ мѧчки (not мачци)
„ „	Лѣка = <i>Luke</i>	„ Лѣки (not Луци)
„ „	сѣка = <i>sister</i> (dim.)	„ сѣки (not сеци)

Masculine nouns in -a, e.g. слѹга = *man-servant*, though declined throughout like feminine nouns, are looked upon in the sing. as masculine, but in the pl. as feminine, e.g. ѓвѹѣ слѹга је дѓбѹр = *this man-servant is good*, but ѓвѹѣ слѹге су дѓбре = *these men-servants are good*.

Feminine nouns which end in the nom. sing. in a *consonant* have the following inflections, e.g. ствѹр = *thing* :

Sing. Nom.	ствѹр	ствѹри
Gen.	ствѹри	ствѹрѹ
Dat.	ствѹри	ствѹрима
Acc.	ствѹр	ствѹри
Voc.	ствѹри	ствѹри
Inst.	ствѹри (or ствѹрjу)	ствѹрима
Loc.	ствѹри	ствѹрима

The two irregular nouns, маѹи (stem : матер-) = *mother*, and кѹѹи (stem : кѹер-) = *daughter*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	маѹи	маѹере
Gen.	маѹере	маѹѹрѹ
Dat.	маѹери	маѹерама
Acc.	маѹер	маѹере
Voc.	маѹи	маѹере
Inst.	маѹером	маѹерама
Loc.	маѹери	маѹерама
Sing. Nom.	кѹѹи	кѹѹери
Gen.	кѹѹери	кѹѹѹрѹ
Dat.	кѹѹери	кѹѹѹрима
Acc.	кѹѹѹр	кѹѹѹри
Voc.	кѹѹѹри	кѹѹѹри
Inst.	кѹѹѹри (or -jу)	кѹѹѹрима
Loc.	кѹѹѹри	кѹѹѹрима

III. Declension

(NEUTER NOUNS)

In this declension also the same distinction is made between *soft* and *hard* stems as in the other two, and the differences in the declension of the two kinds of stems are the same as in the case of the masculine nouns (cf. p. 45).

A. Example of a soft stem : пѡѡе = *field*.

Sing. Nom.	пѡѡе	Pl. пѡѡа
Gen.	пѡѡа	пѡѡѡ
Dat.	пѡѡу	пѡѡѡма
Acc.	пѡѡе	пѡѡа
Voc.	пѡѡе	пѡѡа
Inst.	пѡѡем	пѡѡѡма
Loc.	пѡѡу	пѡѡѡма

B. Example of a hard stem : сѣло = *village*.

Sing. Nom.	сѣло	Pl. сѣла
Gen.	сѣла	сѣлѡ
Dat.	сѣлу	сѣлѡма
Acc.	сѣло	сѣла
Voc.	сѣло	сѣла
Inst.	сѣлом	сѣлѡма
Loc.	сѣлу	сѣлѡма

The neuter nouns ѡко = *eye*, ѡво (or ѡхо) = *ear*, плѣко = *shoulder*, are declined in the sing. exactly like the above examples, but in the pl. they have preserved the old *dual* forms for nom. acc. voc. : ѡчи, gen. ѡчијѡ, dat. inst. loc. ѡчѡма = *eyes*, ѡши, ѡшијѡ, ѡшиѡма = *ears*, but плѣѡи (nom. acc. voc.), плѣѡѡ or плѣѡѡи (gen.), and плѣѡѡма (dat. inst. loc.) = *shoulders*, and rank as feminine nouns ending in a consonant like ствѡри, cf. p. 48, e.g. ѡве ѡчи = *these eyes*, ѡве ѡши = *these ears*, ѡве плѣѡи = *these shoulders*.

A number of neuter nouns insert in all the cases except the nom. acc. and voc. sing. the syllables -ен- or -ет-. Examples : плѣме (stem : плѣмен-¹) = *tribe*, дѹгме (stem : дѹгмет-) = *button*.

Sing. Nom.	плѣме	Pl.	плѣмѣна
Gen.	плѣмена		плѣмѣнѣ
Dat.	плѣмену		плѣмѣнѣма
Acc.	плѣме		плѣмѣна
Voc.	плѣме		плѣмѣна
Inst.	плѣменом		плѣмѣнѣма
Loc.	плѣмену		плѣмѣнѣма
Sing. Nom.	дѹгме	Pl.	дѹгмѣта
Gen.	дѹгмета		дѹгмѣтѣ
Dat.	дѹгмету		дѹгмѣтѣма
Acc.	дѹгме		дѹгмѣта
Voc.	дѹгме		дѹгмѣта
Inst.	дѹгметом		дѹгмѣтѣма
Loc.	дѹгмету		дѹгмѣтѣма

The neuter nouns нѣбо = *sky, heaven*, чѹдо² = *marvel*, and тѣло = *body*, are declined as follows :

Sing. Nom.	нѣбо	Pl.	нѣбѣса
Gen.	нѣба		нѣбѣсѣ
Dat.	нѣбу		нѣбѣсѣма
Acc.	нѣбо		нѣбѣса
Voc.	нѣбо		нѣбѣса
Inst.	нѣбом		нѣбѣсѣма
Loc.	нѣбу		нѣбѣсѣма

¹ These nouns all originally belonged to different declensions (cf. *nomen, nominis* in Latin), but have now become assimilated in the nom. sing. with the other neuter nouns.

² From which are derived чѹдити се (Class V, 1) = *to be surprised, astonished*, and чѹдноват = *extraordinary*.

CHAPTER 5

Reading Exercise

(For the words cf. also the Vocabulary, pp. 26 ff.)

1. Месо¹ (ог касапин¹) прѡдаје² месо : гѡвеђе³ (i.e. месо) ог гѡвеђину,³ телеће⁴ ог телетину,⁴ јагњеће⁵ ог јагњетину,⁵ ѡвчије⁶ ог ѡвчетину,⁶ свињско⁷ ог свињетину.⁷ 2. Он прѡдаје кобасице,⁸ шунке,⁹ сѹво¹⁰ месо (ог пастрму¹⁰), маст,¹¹ сало,¹² сланину.¹³ 3. Бакалин¹⁴ прѡдаје шећер,¹⁵ каву¹⁶ (ог кафу), чај, брашно, сѡ,¹⁷ ѹље¹⁸ (ог зейтин¹⁸), сирће,¹⁹ шпиритус²⁰ бйбер,²¹ пйринач,²² криз,²³ бадем,²⁴ какао,²⁵ чоколаду,²⁶ макарѡне,²⁷ ананасе,²⁸ сѹво грѡжђе,²⁹ сѹву рйбу,³⁰ ајвар.³¹ 4. Баштѡван³² ог пйлар³² прѡдаје пѡврће³³ (ог зелѣн³³): крѡмпир,³⁴ кѹпус,³⁵ спанаћ,³⁶ кељ,³⁷ пасѹљ,³⁸ ѡѡ,³⁹ сѡѡиво,⁴⁰ грашак,⁴¹ боранију,⁴² салату,⁴³ краставце,⁴⁴ патлиѡане,⁴⁵ тйкве,⁴⁶ шпaргле,⁴⁷ лѹк,⁴⁸ келерабу,⁴⁹ рѡткве,⁵⁰ цвекле,⁵¹ цѡлер,⁵² шаргарѡпу,⁵³ паприку,⁵⁴ пѡршун,⁵⁵ рѣн.⁵⁶ 5. Он прѡдаје вѡће : јабуке,⁵⁷ крѹшке,⁵⁸ шљйве,⁵⁹ трѣшње,⁶⁰ вйшње,⁶¹ јагоде,⁶² кaјсије,⁶³ брѣскве,⁶⁴ лубѣнице,⁶⁵ дйње,⁶⁶ грѡжђе,⁶⁷ ѡрахе,⁶⁸ лѣшњйке,⁶⁹ рйбизле,⁷⁰ маљине,⁷¹ ѡгрѡзд,⁷² смѡкве,⁷³ банане,⁷⁴ помѡранѡе,⁷⁵ лймунове.⁷⁶ 6. Он прѡдаје жйто :⁷⁷ шпѣницу,⁷⁸ кукуруз,⁷⁹ јѣчам,⁸⁰ зѡб⁸¹ (ог ѡвас). 7. Он прѡдаје сйр, кaјмак,⁸² маљо (ог пѹтер⁸³) јаја и живйну⁸⁴: пйлиће,⁸⁵ кѡкѡшке,⁸⁶ пѣтлове,⁸⁷ гѹске,⁸⁸ плѡвке,⁸⁹ кѹрке,⁹⁰ јаребйце,⁹¹ прѣпелице.⁹² 8. Обѹћар⁹³ прaви⁹⁴ и прѡдаје ѡбућу⁹⁵ : дѹбоке⁹⁶ цйпеле,⁹⁶ плйтке⁹⁷ цйпеле,⁹⁷ чйзме,⁹⁸ папуче,⁹⁹ каљаче.¹⁰⁰ 9. Он прѡдаје маљ за црне¹⁰¹ цйпеле, за жѹте¹⁰² цйпеле, пaнтљйке¹⁰³ за цйпеле, дугмѣта¹⁰⁴ за цйпеле. 10. Крѡјач¹⁰⁵ прaви и прѡдаје ѡѡло : кaпѹт, прѣслук, пaнтaлѡне, зймски,¹⁰⁶ кaпѹт,

лётњи¹⁰⁷ капут, јахаће¹⁰⁸ панталоне,¹⁰⁸ обично¹⁰⁹ одело, жакет,¹¹⁰ смокинг,¹¹¹ фрак.¹¹² 11. Кројачица¹¹³ прави женске¹¹⁴ хаљине (ог женско одело): костиме,¹¹⁵ сукње, блузе, огртаче.¹¹⁶ 12. Столар¹¹⁷ прави кревете, столице, столове (ог астале) клупе, ормáne,¹¹⁸ полице,¹¹⁹ врата, прозоре, сандуке, лествице (ог стубе). 13. Гостиничар¹²⁰ (ог кафеџија ог механџија) продaje пиће¹²¹: пиво, вино, ракију,¹²² коњак,¹²³ рум,¹²⁴ каву,¹⁶ соду,¹²⁵ лимунaду,¹²⁶ малину,¹²⁷ минералне¹²⁸ воде. 14. Хотелијер¹²⁹ држи¹³⁰ хотел и ресторaн за доручак,¹³¹ ручак,¹³² ужину¹³³ и вечеру.¹³⁴ Он издaje¹³⁵ собе на првом¹³⁶ спрату,¹³⁷ на другом¹³⁸ спрату, на трећем¹³⁹ спрату. 15. Хотел има вратара¹⁴⁰ (ог портира), келнере,¹⁴¹ момке¹⁴² (ог слуге), служавке¹⁴³ (ог слушкиње), купатила,¹⁴⁴ нужнике,¹⁴⁵ билијаре,¹⁴⁶ карте,¹⁴⁷ доmine,¹⁴⁸ шах.¹⁴⁹ 16. У галантерейској¹⁵⁰ радњи¹⁵¹ продaje се рубље¹⁵² (ог веш): кошуље, подкошуље,¹⁵³ гаће; чарапе, крагне, машине,¹⁵⁴ пешири,¹⁵⁵ рукавице, манжетне, пешкири, мараме, мйриси.¹⁵⁶ 17. Гвожђар¹⁵⁷ продaje гвожђе, челик,¹⁵⁸ бакар,¹⁵⁹ браве,¹⁶⁰ кључеве,¹⁶¹ револвeре,¹⁶² пушке,¹⁶³ машине¹⁶⁴: за каву,¹⁶⁵ за орахе,¹⁶⁶ за месо,¹⁶⁷ &c.; ланце,¹⁶⁸ лопате,¹⁶⁹ мотике,¹⁷⁰ ашове,¹⁷¹ секире,¹⁷² потковице,¹⁷³ ексерe,¹⁷⁴ чекиће,¹⁷⁵ шине,¹⁷⁶ фeдере.¹⁷⁷ 18. Седлар¹⁷⁸ продaje: седла,¹⁷⁹ аmove,¹⁸⁰ узде¹⁸¹ кожу,¹⁸² каише,¹⁸³ бичеве.¹⁸⁴ 19. Кдлар¹⁸⁵ прави и продaje кола: обична (ог прдста) кола, таљиге,¹⁸⁶ теретна¹⁸⁷ кола, двоколице¹⁸⁸ (ог чезе), фијакере¹⁸⁹; самаре.¹⁹⁰ 20. Где је железничка¹⁹¹ станица¹⁹¹? Где је паробродска¹⁹² станица¹⁹²?

¹ butcher. ² sells (present of продавати, cf. p. 127). ³ beef. ⁴ veal. ⁵ lamb. ⁶ mutton. ⁷ pork. ⁸ sausages. ⁹ ham. ¹⁰ dried smoked meat. ¹¹ fat, lard. ¹² suet. ¹³ smoked bacon. ¹⁴ grocer. ¹⁵ sugar. ¹⁶ coffee. ¹⁷ salt. ¹⁸ oil. ¹⁹ vinegar. ²⁰ methyiated. ²¹ pepper. ²² rice. ²³ groats. ²⁴ almond.

25 cocoa. 26 chocolate. 27 macaroni. 28 pine-apple. 29 raisins.
 30 salt fish. 31 caviar. 32 fruiterer. 33 vegetables. 34 potatoes.
 35 cabbages. 36 spinach. 37 kale. 38 haricot beans. 39 broad
 beans. 40 lentils. 41 peas. 42 kidney beans, scarlet runner = *French
 beans*. 43 salad. 44 cucumber. 45 tomatoes (црвенї or red;
 плави (blue) п. are *aubergine* or *egg-plant*). 46 marrow or pump-
 kin. 47 asparagus. 48 onion (црнї or black; N.B. бѣлї (white)
 л. = *garlic*; прѣзїплук = *leeks*). 49 colrabi. 50 radish. 51 beetroot.
 52 celery. 53 carrots. 54 paprika. 55 parsley. 56 horse-radish.
 57 apples. 58 pears. 59 plums. 60 sweet cherries. 61 sour cherries.
 62 strawberries. 63 apricots. 64 peaches. 65 water-melons.
 66 sweet-melons. 67 grapes. 68 walnuts. 69 hazel-nuts. 70 red
 currants. 71 raspberries. 72 gooseberries. 73 figs. 74 bananas.
 75 oranges. 76 lemons. 77 corn (cereals in general). 78 wheat.
 79 maize. 80 barley. 81 oats. 82 cream. 83 butter. 84 poultry, fowls.
 85 chickens. 86 hens. 87 cocks. 88 geese. 89 ducks. 90 turkeys.
 91 partridge. 92 quails. 93 shoemaker. 94 makes. 95 boots and
 shoes. 96 boots. 97 shoes. 98 top-boots. 99 slippers. 100 galoshes.
 101 black. 102 yellow. 103 laces. 104 buttons. 105 tailor.
 106 winter-. 107 summer-. 108 riding-breeches. 109 ordinary,
 every-day. 110 morning-coat (long). 111 dinner-jacket.
 112 evening dress. 113 ladies' tailor, dressmaker. 114 women's.
 115 costumes. 116 mantle. 117 carpenter. 118 cupboard.
 119 shelves. 120 restaurant-keeper. 121 beverage. 122 brandy,
 especially of plums, also called шљивовица. 123 cognac.
 124 rum. 125 soda-water. 126 lemonade. 127 raspberry-syrup.
 128 mineral waters. 129 hotel-keeper. 130 keeps. 131 breakfast.
 132 lunch (or dinner in the middle of the day). 133 tea. 134 supper
 (or dinner in the evening). 135 lets. 136 first. 137 floor or story.
 138 second. 139 third. 140 concierge. 141 waiter. 142 man-
 servant. 143 maid (-servant). 144 bath-room. 145 lavatory, W.C.
 146 billiard-table. 147 playing-cards. 148 dominoes. 149 chess.
 150 hosier's, haberdasher's, and milliner's. 151 shop (or дукан).
 152 linen (underlinen). 153 vests. 154 ties. 155 hats. 156 scents.
 157 ironmonger. 158 steel. 159 copper (N.B. brass is мѣсинѣ).
 160 lock. 161 key. 162 revolver. 163 rifle. 164 machine (N.B.
 машина is also now always used for matches, though жїжїца
 is the proper word; a box of matches is кутїја машинѣ).

¹⁶⁵ coffee-machine. ¹⁶⁶ machine for grinding nuts. ¹⁶⁷ mincing-machine. ¹⁶⁸ chains. ¹⁶⁹ shovel. ¹⁷⁰ hoe. ¹⁷¹ spade. ¹⁷² axe. ¹⁷³ horse-shoe. ¹⁷⁴ nail. ¹⁷⁵ hammer. ¹⁷⁶ tyre. ¹⁷⁷ spring. ¹⁷⁸ saddler. ¹⁷⁹ saddles. ¹⁸⁰ harness. ¹⁸¹ bit, bridle. ¹⁸² leather. ¹⁸³ strap. ¹⁸⁴ whip. ¹⁸⁵ carriage-maker, wheelwright. ¹⁸⁶ single-horse carriage. ¹⁸⁷ waggon, cart. ¹⁸⁸ two-wheeled cart. ¹⁸⁹ cab. ¹⁹⁰ wooden donkey-saddle. ¹⁹¹ railway-station. ¹⁹² steamer-station.

CHAPTER 6

PERSONAL AND DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS AND
THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF *TO BE*

I. The Personal Pronouns are declined as follows :

	1st person.	2nd person.	3rd person.		
Sing.			Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	jâ	tî	òh	òna	òno
Gen.	mène, me	tèbe, te	hèga, ga	hê, je	hèga, ga
Dat.	mèni, mi	tèbi, ti	hèmu, mu	hòj, joj	hèmu, mu
Acc.	mène, me	tèbe, te	hèga, ga	hû, ju, je	hèga, ga
Voc.	—	tî	—	—	—
Inst.	mhôm	tòbom	hîm(e)	hôm	hîm
Loc.	mèni	tèbi	hèmu, mu	hòj	hèmu, mu

Pl.					
Nom.	mî	vî	òni	òne	òna
Gen.	hâc	vâc		hîx, ix	
Dat.	hâma (or hâm)	vâma (or vâm)		hîma, im	
Acc.	hâc	vâc		hîx, ix	
Voc.	—	vî		—	
Inst.	hâma	vâma		hîma	
Loc.	hâma	vâma		hîma	

Note on the short forms of the Personal Pronouns.

The long forms of these pronouns, e.g. мене, тебе, are used when they are emphasized, especially at the beginning of a sentence, e.g. *Нѣга сам видео а нѣ тебе* = *it was he whom I saw, not thou*; also usually when governed by prepositions, especially those of one syllable, e.g. *уз мене* = *close to me*; but when, as often happens, such prepositions appear in disyllabic form, then the short form can be used, e.g. *ѹзѧ ме*. The acc. sing. of он occasionally appears in the contracted form ѣ, e.g. after such prepositions as за, на, у, e.g. *нѧ ѣ* = *on to him*. The commonest form of the acc. sing. of она is је; ју is only used when the meaning would be doubtful, e.g. *он ју је пољубио* = *he kissed her* (not је је). N.B. the acc. sing. of оно is the same as the gen. sing., not like the nom. sing. cf. pp. 37, 56.

The reflexive pronoun is declined thus :

Nom.	—
Gen.	себе. ¹
Dat.	себи.
Acc.	себе, се.
Voc.	—
Inst.	себѣм.
Loc.	себи.

II. The Demonstrative Pronouns are :

Sing. *овѧј (m.), овѧ (f.), овѣ (n.)* = *this*.

Pl. *овѣ, ѡве, овѧ* = *these*.

Sing. *тѧј, тѧ, тѣ* = *that*.

Pl. *тѣ, тѣ, тѧ* = *those*.

¹ This pronoun can be used of any person in either number, but must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence; it can mean : *myself, thyself, himself, herself, itself, ourselves, yourselves, or themselves*; it has no nominative or vocative.

Sing. ònāj, ònā, ònō = *that* (*yonder*).

Pl. ònī, ònē, ònā = *those* (*yonder*).

These are the complete forms of the demonstrative pronouns mentioned on p. 25; they are declined as follows:

N.	òvāj	òvā	òvō	tāj	tā	tō
G.	òvogā (or òvog) ¹	òvē	òvogā (or òvog) ¹	tōga (or tōg) ¹	tē	tōga (or tōg) ¹
D.	òvomē (or òvom) ¹	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) ¹	tōme (or tōm) ¹	tōj	tōme (or tōm) ¹
A.	òvāj (or òvoga) ²	òvū	òvo	tāj (tōga) ²	tū	tō
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvīm	òvōm	òvim	tīm	tōm	tīm
L.	òvomē (or òvom) ¹	òvōj	òvomē (or òvom) ¹	tōme (or tōm) ¹	tōj	tōme (or tōm) ¹

N.	òvī	òvē	òvā	ti	tē	tā
G.	òvīx	òvīx	òvīx	tiX	tiX	tiX
D.	òvima ³	òvima ³	òvima ³	tīma ³	tīma ³	tīma ³
A.	òvē	òvē	òvā	tē	tē	tā
V.	—	—	—	—	—	—
I.	òvima ³	òvima ³	òvima ³	tīma ³	tīma ³	tīma ³
L.	òvima ³	òvima ³	òvima ³	tīma ³	tīma ³	tīma ³

ònāj is declined like òvāj.

Vocabulary

студент (*m.*) = *student*

професор (*m.*) = *professor*,
master of a secondary school

ѣак (*m.*) = *schoolboy*

ученик (*m.*) = *schoolboy*

ученица (*f.*) = *schoolgirl*

учитељ (*m.*) = *man teacher*

учитељица (*f.*) = *a woman teacher*

човек (*m.*) = *man*

људи (*m. pl.*) = *men, people*

муж (*m.*) = *husband*

¹ Cf. p. 65, note 1.

² The acc. sing. masc. varies according to the rule given on p. 37, note 2, and on p. 65, note 2.

³ Colloquially, but also in literature, especially when there are several consecutive words with the same ending, this final vowel is omitted.

жена (*f.*) = *woman, wife*
 отац (*m.*) = *father*
 мајка (or маћи) (*f.*) = *mother*
 дете (*n.*) = *child*
 деца (*f. coll. sing.*) = *children*
 брат (*m.*) = *brother*
 браћа (*f. coll. sing.*) = *brothers*
 сестра (*f.*) = *sister*
 господин (*m.*) = *Mr., gentleman*
 господа (*f. coll. sing.*) = *gentlemen, Messrs.*
 гдѣспођа (*f.*) = *Mrs., lady*
 гдѣспођица (*f.*) = *Miss, young lady*
 млáдић (*m.*) = *young man*
 радник (*m.*) = *workman*
 радница (*f.*) = *workwoman*
 животиња (*f.*) = *animal, beast*
 јагње (*n.*) = *lamb*
 јагњад (*f. coll. sing.*) = *lambs*
 пас (*m.*) } = *dog*
 псѣто (*n.*) }
 Пѣтар = *Peter*

Пáвле = *Paul*
 Јòвáнка = *Jane*
 Мáрија = *Mary*
 Америкáнац (*m.*) = *an American (m.)*
 Америкáнка (*f.*) = *an American (f.)*
 Ёнглѣз (*m.*) = *an Englishman*
 Ёнглѣскиња (*f.*) = *an Englishwoman*
 Италијáн ¹ (*m.*) = *an Italian (m.)*
 Италијáнка ¹ (*f.*) = *an Italian (f.)*
 Нémaц (*m.*) = *a German (m.)*
 Нѣмица (*f.*) = *a German (f.)*
 Рýс (*m.*) = *a Russian (m.)*
 Рýскиња (*f.*) = *a Russian (f.)*
 Србин (*m.*) = *a Serbian (m.)*
 Српкиња (*f.*) = *a Serbian (f.)*
 Фрáнцýз (*m.*) = *a Frenchman*
 Фрáнцýскиња (*f.*) = *a Frenchwoman*
 For conjunctions, cf. p. 189.

Note

Collective nouns such as деца, браћа, господа, corresponding to the nouns дете (*n.*), брат (*m.*), господин (*m.*), and all ending in -ад, such as јагњад, follow the declension of the singular of the feminine substantives, but the verb with which they are used is in the plural, e.g. òvāj гòспòдин је . . . = *this gentleman is*, or tāj брáт је . . . = *that brother is* . . . ; here the pronouns òvāj and tāj are masc. and the verb is in the sing., but òvā гòспòда cy . . . , or tā брáќа cy . . . = *these gentlemen are* . . . , *those brothers are* . . . ; here the pronouns are fem. sing. and the verb is in the plural.

¹ The initial и is frequently dropped.

Serbian Sentences

1. Ја сам студент. 2. Ти си дете. 3. Ви сте професор. 4. Шта је онај човек?—Он је учитељ. 5. Ко је она жена?—Она је учитељица. 6. Шта је пећто?—Оно је животиња. 7. Петар и Павле нису професори, они су учитељи. 8. Јованка и Марија нису учитељице, оне су ученице. 9. Шта су пећто и јагње?—Они су животиње. 10. Ми смо студенти. 11. Ви сте деца. 12. Ви сте професори. 13. Ово је перо, то је оловка (ог плајваз), оно је мастило. 14. Ова госпођа и та госпођица су сестре. 15. Ово дете и то су ђаци.¹ 16. Јесу ли ова деца ученици?—Јесу. 17. Ово је Енглџ, то је Францџ, оно је Србин. 18. Ти младићи и они нису браћа. 19. Та госпође су Италијанке, а оне госпођице су Енглџскиње. 20. Ово су Немце. 21. Ове жене су раднице. 22. Ко су ти људи?—Ово су Немци. 23. Ово су Енглџи и Енглџскиње, то су Францџи и Францџскиње, оно су Рџси и Рџскиње. 24. Ови људи су Италијани, ти су Срби, а они су Немци. 25. Јесу ли ово Францџи?—Нису, то су Италијани. 26. Јесу ли ти људи Енглџи? Нису, ово су Америкџци. 27. Ово нису пера, ово су оловке (ог плајвази). 28. Јесте ли ви господин А.?—Нисам, ја сам професор Б. 29. Да ли су она господа Срби?—Јесу. 30. Зар сте ви Енглџ!?—Јесам. 31. Зар нисте ви Енглџскиња!?—Нисам, ја сам Америкџка. 32. Ви сте Српкиња?—Да (јесам).

Note

Pronouns (and adjectives) referring to two or more neuter nouns in the sing. are put in the masc. pl. (cf. sentence 9 above). But if they refer (1) to neuter nouns in the plural,

¹ Nom. sing. ђак, nom. pl. ђаци, cf. p. 18.

(2) to feminine collective nouns used as the plural of the corresponding masculine or neuter singulars, the pronouns (and adjectives) are put in the neuter pl. or fem. sing., which happen to be the same, e.g.

- | | |
|---|------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>f. дѣца су . . . the children are . . .</i> | } <i>n. она су . . . they are.</i> |
| 2. <i>f. јагњѡд су . . . the lambs are . . .</i> | |
| 3. <i>дѣца и јагњѡд су . . . the children and lambs are . . .</i> | |

English Sentences

1. You are a student.
2. What is he?—He is a professor.
3. What is she?—She is a teacher.
4. Peter is not a teacher, he is a schoolboy.
5. Mary is a schoolgirl.
6. This is a dog.
7. That girl and this woman are not sisters.
8. This child and that are brothers.
9. Who is that man?—He is an Englishman.
10. Who is that lady?—She is a Frenchwoman.
11. Are they (*f.*) work-women?—Yes, they are.
12. Are these men Italian?—No, they are not; they are French.
13. Are you a Serbian (*m.*)?—No, I am not; I am a Russian (*m.*).
14. You are a Serbian (*f.*)?—Yes, I am.
15. Are you not English (*f.*)?—No, I am not; I am American (*f.*).
16. What is this?—That is a pencil.
17. What is that?—This is a pen.
18. Is that a dog?—No, it is not; it is a lamb.
19. Is this ink?—Yes, it is.
20. Who is that young lady?—That is Miss X.
21. Are these children schoolboys?—Yes, they are.

CHAPTER 7

THE PAST TENSE OF *TO BE*

THIS is formed by means of the short forms of the present tense of *бѣти*, followed by the past participle active of the same verb, which is :

Sing. : *м. бѣо, f. бѣла, n. бѣло.*

Pl. : *м. бѣли, f. бѣле, n. бѣла.*

- | | | |
|----------|---|---|
| SINGULAR | { | 1. ја сам бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) сам =
I have been, I was. |
| | | 2. ти си бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) си = thou
hast been, thou wast. |
| | | 3. он је бѣо or бѣо је = he has been, he was.
она је бѣла or бѣла је = she has been, she was.
оно је бѣло or бѣло је = it has been, it was. |
| PLURAL | { | 1. ми смо бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) смо
= we have been, we were. |
| | | 2. ви сте бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле f.) сте =
you have been, you were. |
| | | 3. они су бѣли or бѣли су } = they have been,
оне су бѣле or бѣле су } = they were.
она су бѣла or бѣла су } |

This tense may have the meaning of either *was* or *have been* in English, e.g.

1. ја сам бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла f.) сам јутрос у
пољу = I was in the country this morning.
2. бѣо (бѣла f.) сам (or ја сам бѣо, бѣла f.) јуче у
Лондону = I was in London yesterday.
3. бѣо (бѣла f.) сам у Паризу = I have been in Paris.

The interrogative forms are :

- јесам ли (ја) бѣо (бѣла f.) ? or да ли сам (ја) бѣо
(бѣла f.) ? = Have I been, was I ?
- је ли (он) бѣо ? or да ли је (он) бѣо ? = Has he been,
was he ?
- јесте ли (ви) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? or да ли сте (ви) бѣли
(бѣле f.) ? = Have you been, were you ?

Or with *зѣр*, cf. p. 33.

- зѣр сте (ви) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? = Have you been, were you ?
- зѣр су (оне) бѣле ? = Have they (f.) been, were they (f.) ?

But such questions are also frequently asked in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33.

The negative forms are :

(jâ) нѣсам бѣо (бѣла f.) = *I have not been, I was not.*

(вѣ) нѣсте бѣли (бѣле f.) = *You have not been, you were not.*

(ѣни) нѣсу бѣли = *They (m.) have not been, they were not.*

The negative-interrogative forms are :

нѣсте ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *Have you not been, were you not ?*

Or more emphatic forms with зѣп, cf. p. 33.

зѣп нѣсте (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) ? ! = *Have you not been, were you not ? !*

зѣп нѣсу (ѣни) бѣли ? ! = *Have they (m.) not been, were they (m.) not ? !*

зѣп нѣсу (ѣне) бѣле ? ! = *Have they (f.) not been, were they (f.) not ? !*

CHAPTER 8

ADJECTIVES (AND ADJECTIVAL ADVERBS)

THE adjective in Serbian has two forms, definite and indefinite. The definite adjectives are only used when reference is made to a particular object ; in all other cases the indefinite adjectives are used. That is to say, the difference between the two is like that between the definite and the indefinite article in English. It is only in the singular of the masculine adjective that a difference of form has survived, e.g.

Indefinite : стѣп¹ чѣвек = *an old man* (cf. *ein alter Mann*).

Definite : стѣри чѣвек = *the old man* (cf. *der alte Mann*).

¹ The word мѣтѣп, fem. мѣтѣпа, is also used for *old*, disrespectfully, e.g. of meat which is tough.

In the feminine and neuter nom. sing. and in the whole nom. pl. the difference is only one of the quality of the accent and is hardly noticeable even to Serbians. In general, it may be said that the indefinite form is being gradually superseded by the definite, but the forms are often used inconsistently.

In the sing. the indefinite masc. adjectives end in a consonant or in -o, representing a lost -и (cf. p. 16), the fem. end in -а, the neuter mostly in -о, a few in -е if the stem is soft; in the pl. the masc. end in -и, the fem. in -е, the neut. in -а.

The adjectives may be divided into the following categories: (1) adjectives denoting quality and size, (2) possessive adjectives, and (3) adjectives denoting the material of which things are made, e.g.

1. зѣлен = *green*, дѣбар = *good*, вѣшт = *skilful*, *clever*,
вѣликий = *big*, *large*, мѣли = *little*, *small*.
2. сръпскій = *Serbian*, енглѣскій = *English*, очев = *father's*.
3. гвѣзден = *iron*, свѣлен = *silk*, златан = *golden*.

The adjectives denoting quality, size, and material may be used either in the *indefinite* or in the *definite* form, with certain exceptions: the adjectives вѣлики = *big*, *large*, мѣли = *little*, *small*, as well as a large number derived from expressions of time, e.g. дѣнашній = *of to-day* (from дѣнас = *to-day*), вѣчѣрній = *evening* (from вѣче or вѣчер = *evening*), лѣтній = *summer* (from лѣто = *summer*), are used *only* in the definite form; on the other hand, рад = *glad* is used *only* in the indefinite form.

Of the possessive adjectives, those ending in -ов and -ин, e.g. Петров = *Peter's*, сѣстрин = *sister's*, are *only* used in the indefinite form; those in -ски, e.g. енглѣскій = *English*, are *only* used in the definite form (cf. p. 63).

In the nom. sing. of the indefinite forms of the masc.

adjectives, if the stem ends in a group of consonants (except the groups -ст, -шт, -зд, -жд) the letter -а is inserted before the last consonant for the sake of euphony, e.g. ймѹѣан = *well to do*, бѣлѣстан = *ill* (cf. p. 16).

The possessive adjectives are derived from the respective nouns by adding -ов, -ев, or -ин. If the stem is hard -ов is added, if it is soft, -ев. The ending -ин is most frequently added to the stem of the nouns ending in -а. Examples :

госпѣдин = *gentleman, the master*, adj. госпѣдинов = *the master's*.

прѣјатељ = *friend* ,, прѣјатељев = *friend's*.

сѣстра = *sister* ,, сѣстрин = *sister's*.

вѣјвода = *general* ¹ ,, вѣјводин = *of the general*.

However, these possessive adjectives must not be confused with those formed with the ending -ски, which have quite different meanings, e.g.

госпѣдин : гѣспѣдскѣй = *lordly*.

прѣјатељ : прѣјатељскѣй = *friendly*.

сѣстра : сѣстринскѣй = *sisterly*.

вѣјвода : вѣјводскѣй = *of a general or like a general* ;
which can also be used *adverbially*, e.g.

прѣјатељскѣй = *in a friendly way*,

and cf. сѣрпскѣй = *Serbian*, and also *in Serbian*, or *in Serbian fashion*.

Those nouns ending in ап, as ѡвчѣр = *shepherd*, госпѣдѣр = *master*, form the adjective either in ов or ев : овчѣров (ев), госпѣдѣров (ев).

Masculine nouns ending in ц, such as ѡтац = *father*, make their possessive adjectives as follows : ѡчев ; the word кнѣз = *prince*, has кнѣжев. See p. 18.

¹ N.B. генѣрѣл or ѣгенѣрѣл is also used.

Nouns with stems in *к* or *ц*, such as *мāјка* = *mother*, or *Мйлица* = *Milica* (a fem. name), change *к* and *ц* to *ч* before *и*, e.g. *мāјчин*, *Мйличин*. If the stem ends in *г* or *х* it does not change, e.g. *слўга* = *man-servant*, *снāха* = *daughter-in-law* : *слўгин*, *снāхин* or *снāин*.

Adverbs formed from Adjectives

The neuter form (nom. sing.) of every adjective, except those in category 2, can be used as an adverb, e.g. *дбpo* = *well, very well, all right* ; cf. p. 184.

CHAPTER 9

DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES

THE adjectives are declined as follows :

I. Indefinite Adjectives

Example of a hard stem : *жўт*, *жўта*, *жўто* = *yellow*.

Sing. Nom.	жўт	жўта	жўто
Gen.	жўта	жўте	жўта
Dat.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Acc.	жўт or жўта ¹	жўту	жўто
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтйм	жўтōм	жўтйм
Loc.	жўту	жўтōј	жўту
Pl. Nom.	жўти	жўте	жўта
Gen.	жўтйх	жўтйх	жўтйх
Dat.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм
Acc.	жўте	жўте	жўта
Voc.	—	—	—
Inst.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм
Loc.	жўтйм	жўтйм	жўтйм

¹ Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

Adjectives with soft stems

Indefinite adjectives with soft stems are declined exactly like those with hard stems except that the nom. and acc. sing. neut. ends in -e, e.g. *врѣхъ, врѣха, врѣхе* = *hot*.

II. Definite Adjectives

Example of a hard stem :

Sing. Nom.	жѹтї	жѹтѧ	жѹтѠ
Gen.	жѹтѠга ¹	жѹтѣ	жѹтѠга
Dat.	жѹтѠме ¹	жѹтѠј	жѹтѠме
Acc.	жѹтї or жѹтѠгѧ	жѹтѹ	жѹтѠ
Voc.	жѹтї	жѹтѧ	жѹтѠ
Inst.	жѹтїм	жѹтѠм	жѹтїм
Loc.	жѹтѠме ¹	жѹтѠј	жѹтѠме
Pl. Nom.	жѹтї	жѹтѣ	жѹтѧ
Gen.	жѹтїх	жѹтїх	жѹтїх
Dat.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм
Acc.	жѹтѣ	жѹтѣ	жѹтѣ
Voc.	жѹтї	жѹтї	жѹтї
Inst.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм
Loc.	жѹтїм	жѹтїм	жѹтїм

Important notes

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *жѹтѠг* instead of *жѹтѠга*, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *жѹтѠм* instead of *жѹтѠме*, and these shorter forms are now those most generally used. Instead of *жѹтѠме* the form *жѹтѠмѹ* is also sometimes to be found.

2. The acc. sing. of the masc. adjectives, both indefinite and definite, is the same as the gen. sing. when it qualifies

¹ Cf. p. 56, foot-note 3.

Sing.	ЊѢН ¹	ЊѢНА	ЊѢНО	} <i>her.</i>
Pl.	ЊѢНИ	ЊѢНЕ	ЊѢНА	
Sing.	ЊЊХОВ	ЊЊХОВА	ЊЊХОВО	} <i>their</i> (masc. & fem.).
Pl.	ЊЊХОВИ	ЊЊХОВЕ	ЊЊХОВА	

The possessive-reflexive pronoun is :

Sing.	СВѦЈ	СВѦЈА	СВѦЈЕ	} <i>one's own.</i>
Pl.	СВѦЈИ	СВѦЈЕ	СВѦЈА	

Like the personal-reflexive pronoun this can be used of any of the three persons in either number, but it must always refer directly to the subject of the sentence ; it can mean : *my own, thy own, his own, her own, its own, our own, your own, their own.*

These are declined as follows :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
Sing. Nom.	мѦЈ	мѦЈА	мѦЈЕ
Gen.	мѦГА	мѦЈЕ	мѦГА
Dat.	мѦМЕ	мѦЈѦЈ	мѦМЕ
Acc.	мѦЈ or мѦГА ²	мѦЈУ	мѦЈЕ
Voc.	мѦЈ	мѦЈА	мѦЈЕ
Inst.	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѦМ	мѦЈѢМ
Loc.	мѦМЕ	мѦЈѦЈ	мѦМЕ
Pl. Nom.	мѦЈИ	мѦЈЕ	мѦЈА
Gen.	мѦЈѢХ	мѦЈѢХ	мѦЈѢХ
Dat.	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ
Acc.	мѦЈЕ	мѦЈЕ	мѦЈЕ
Voc.	мѦЈИ	мѦЈЕ	мѦЈЕ
Inst.	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ
Loc.	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ	мѦЈѢМ

ТВѦЈ, and the reflexive pronoun СВѦЈ, are declined exactly

¹ Another form of this pronoun is ЊѢЗИН.

² Cf. note 2 on p. 68.

like *môj*, and like the definite adjective with a soft stem (cf. p. 66). The possessive pronouns *нѣм* and *вѣм* are also declined in the same way, but *нѣгов*, *нѣн*, and *нѣхов* are declined like the indefinite adjectives with a hard stem, e.g. *жѣт*, cf. p. 65.

Important notes

1. There are alternative forms of the gen. and acc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môr* instead of *môra*, and of the dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut., viz. *môm* instead of *môme*, and these shorter forms are very generally used in conversation, though not in literature.

But there are also other fuller forms of these same cases which are sometimes to be met with, viz. gen. *mòjera*, dat. and loc. *mòjemy*. Cf. note 1 on p. 65.

2. The acc. sing. masc. varies in the case of all the possessive pronouns according to the rule given in note 2 on p. 65.

Vocabulary

рòдители (*m. pl.*) = *parents*
 сын (*m.*) = *son*
 кѣй or кѣрка (*f.*) = *daughter*
 старѣ-мѣйка (*f.*) = *grandmother*
 дѣда (*m.*) = *grandfather*
 бѣба (*f.*) = (1) *grandmother*,
 (2) *old woman*
 ѣнук (*m.*) = *grandson*
 стрѣц (*m.*) = *uncle* (father's
 brother)
 стрѣна (*f.*) = *aunt* (father's
 brother's wife)
 ѣжѣк (*m.*) = *uncle* (mother's
 brother)
 ѣжна (*f.*) = *aunt* (mother's
 brother's wife)
 тѣча (*m.*) = *uncle* (husband of
 father's or mother's sister)

тѣтка (*f.*) = *aunt* (father's or
 mother's sister)
 брѣт од стрѣца
 or брѣтучед } = *1st cousin*
 брѣт од тѣтке } (masc.)
 брѣт од ѣжѣка }
 сѣстра од стрѣца } = *1st cousin*
 сѣстра од тѣтке } (fem.)
 сѣстра од ѣжѣка }
 синòвац (*m.*) } = *nephew* (bro-
 брѣтанац (*m.*) } ther's son)
 сѣстрик (*m.*) = *nephew* (sister's
 son)
 пашѣнози (nom. sing. пашѣ-
 ног), *m.* = *husbands of two*
sisters
 свѣкар (*m.*) = *father-in-law*
 (husband's father)

свѣкрва (m.) = *mother-in-law*
(husband's mother)

тѣст (m.) = *father-in-law* (wife's father)

ташта (f.) = *mother-in-law*
(wife's mother)

зѣт (m.) = *son-in-law* or *brother-in-law* (daughter's or sister's husband)

шўрѣк (m.) = *wife's brother*

шўрѣја (f.) = *wife's brother's wife*

снаја, or снаха (f.) = *daughter-in-law* or *sister-in-law*

свѣстика (f.) = *wife's sister*

зѣова (f.) = *husband's sister*

јѣтрва (f.) = *husband's brother's wife*

дѣвер (m.) = *husband's brother*

пrijатељ (m.) = *friend* (masc.)

Sing. црн (m.), црна¹ (f.), црно (n.) } = *black*

Pl. црни (m.), црне (f.), црна (n.) }

Similarly :

лѣп, лѣпа,¹ лѣпо = *beautiful*

жѣв, жѣва, жѣво = *alive*

здрѣв, здрѣва, здрѣво = *healthy, well*

стѣр, стѣра, стѣро = *old*

блѣд, блѣда, блѣдо = *pale*

бѣгат, бѣгата, бѣгато = *rich*

рўмен, рўмена, рўмено = *rosy, red*.²

For prepositions, adverbs, and conjunctions, cf. pp. 151, 179, 189.

¹ N.B. The accent on the neut. sing. and on the masc. fem. neut. pl. usually follows that on the fem. sing.

² red also = црвен, црвена, црвено.

³ Cf. p. 16.

пријатељица (f.) = *friend* (fem.)

адвѣкат (m.) = *barrister* or *solicitor*

Бѣград (m.) = *Belgrade*

Лѣндѣн (m.) = *London*

Пѣриз (m.) = *Paris*

Енглѣска (f.) = *England*

Францўска (f.) = *France*

кўќа (f.) = *house*

сѣло (n.) = *village*

брѣг (m.) = *hill*

брѣжўлак (m.) = *hillock*

пѣрк (m.) = *park*

башта (f.) } = *garden*

врѣт (m.) }

књѣга (f.) = *book*

ѣбраз (m.) = *cheek* (of face)

шѣтња (f.) = *walk*

зѣбава (f.) = *entertainment, ball, party*

ѣблѣстан, ѣблѣсна,³ ѣблѣсно = *ill*

ѣмўћан, ѣмўћна,³ ѣмўћно = *well to do*

вѣлики, вѣлика, вѣлико = *big, large*

мѣли, мѣла, мѣло = *little, small*

рѣћенї, рѣћенѣ, рѣћенѣ = *of one's own family*

Reading Exercise

1. Мој стриц је био адвокат. 2. Моја тетка је стара жена. 3. Моје дете је било блесно. 4. Моји стричеви су били богати. 5. Моје тетке су врло старе. 6. Моја деца су била блесна. 7. Наш стриц је њућан човек. 8. Наша тетка је била у Енглеској. 9. Наше дете је у парку. 10. Наши стричеви су били у Француској. 11. Наше тетке су биле њућне жене. 12. Наша деца су била у шетњи. 13. Је ли твој отац учитељ?—Није, он је официр. 14. Је ли жива твоја мајка?—Јест.¹ 15. Где је твоје село?—На ономоме брећу. 16. Где су твоји родитељи?—У Београду. 17. Јесу ли ово твоје књиге?—Јесу. 18. Јесу ли ово твоја деца?—Нису. 19. Је ли ваш отац здрав?—Није, блестан је. 20. Где је ваша кућа?—У селу. 21. Да ли је ваше село велико?—Није, мало је. 22. Зар нису ваши родитељи у Београду? !—Нису, они су у селу. 23. Зар су ово ваше књиге?—Јесу. 24. Ваша села су на њим брегџима?—Јесу. 25. Његов пријатељ није био у Паризу. 26. Његова пријатељица није учитељица. 27. Његово јагње није било у врту. 28. Његови пријатељи нису били код куће. 29. Његове пријатељице нису биле у Лондону. 30. Његова јагњад нису била у врту. 31. Њен муж није био богат. 32. Њена хаљина није била лепа. 33. Њено лице није бледо. 34. Њени образи нису румени. 35. Њене очи нису црне. 36. Њена деца нису била у школи. 37. Зар њихов пријатељ није био у Лондону? !—Није. 38. Да ли је њихова сестра била учитељица?—Јест.¹ 39. Није ли њихово дете било блесно?—Јест.¹ 40. Њихови родитељи нису били никада богати. 41. Њихове кћери (ог ћерке) нису биле на забави. 42. Њихова деца нису била здрава.

¹ A very colloquial alternative form is *јесте* and *јес*.

Notes

4. стрѣц (*m.*)=*uncle*, *pl.* стрѣцеви (*not* стрицеви). The same with дѣц (*m.*)=*father*, *pl.* дѣчеви; зѣц (*m.*)=*hare*, *pl.* зѣчеви, кнѣз (*m.*)=*prince*, *pl.* кнѣжеви.

12. бѣти у шѣтъи=*to be on a walk*; ѣћи у шѣтъу=*to go for a walk*.

25. Many fem. nouns are formed from masc. nouns by means of the ending -ица, e.g. прѣјатељ—прѣјатељица.

28. кѡд куће=*at home*.

30. Neuter collective nouns ending in -ад, denoting persons or animals, seldom things, are usually derived from the neuter nouns whose stems end in -ет (*gen. sing.*), e.g. јѣгње (*n.*)=*gen. sing.* јѣгњета, *coll. pl.* јѣгњад, сирѡче (*n.*)=*orphan (m. or f.)*, *gen. sing.* сирѡчета, *coll. pl.* сѣрѡчад, &c., cf. p. 50; the *gen.* of these ends in -и, cf. pp. 48, 57.

35. дѡи = *eyes* are in the *pl.* declined as follows: Nom. Acc. Voc. дѡи, Gen. дѡѣѣѣ, Dat. Inst. Loc. дѡима, cf. pp. 49, 50.

41. кѣѣри, cf. p. 48 f.

English Sentences

1. My aunt was rich. 2. My uncles were barristers. 3. My uncle has been in France. 4. My child was not ill. 5. Those are my books. 6. Where are my children?—They are in the park. 7. Where are your aunts?—In Belgrade. 8. Is your mother a teacher?—No, she is not. 9. His father is a teacher. 10. Their village is on that hill (yonder). 11. This is his book. 12. Where is her book? 13. Where are her children? 14. Your parents are in Belgrade?—Yes, they are. 15. Are your parents not in the village¹?—No, they are not; they are in Belgrade. 16. Are these books yours?—No, they are not. 17. This is the house of my friend. 18. Her lamb was not in the garden. 19. Their friends (*m.*) were not at home. 20. His friends (*f.*) are in the country. 21. Her lambs are in the garden. 22. Her husband is ill. 23. Her dress was nice. 24. His cheeks are not rosy, they are pale. 25. Her eyes are dark. 26. Have their children not been at school? 27. Where has her daughter been?—She was at a party. 28. Have

¹ = 'in the country'.

their sisters (ever) been in London ?—No, they have not ; but they have been in Paris. 29. Where were you yesterday (јуче) ?—We were at home. 30. She was very ill yesterday.

Sentences especially illustrating Serbian relationships

Мој отац и твој су рођен¹ браћа ; њихов отац је наш деда, њихова мајка је наша баба, ми смо њихови унуци. Твој отац је мој стриц, његова жена је моја стрица, ја сам његов синовац, ти си мој брат од стрица, а и ја сам твој ; твоја рођена сестра је моја сестра од стрица, ја сам њен брат од стрица.—Твоја мајка и моја су рођене сестре ; њихова мајка је моја баба (ог стара-мајка), ја сам њен унук. Моја мајка је твоја тетка, њен муж је твој теча, ти си њен сестрић а мој брат од тетке ; моја рођена сестра је твоја сестра од тетке.—Моја мајка и твој отац су рођени брат и сестра ; твој отац је мој ујак, његова жена је моја ујна, ја сам његов сестрић ; моја мајка је твоја тетка, ти си њен братанац ; ти си мој брат од ујака, ја сам твој брат од тетке ; твоја рођена сестра је моја сестра од ујака, а моја рођена сестра је твоја сестра од тетке.—Муж моје сестре је зет мојих родитеља и мој зет ; мој отац је његов тајт, моја мајка је његова тајта, моја сестра је његова свастика, а ја сам његов шурак ; моја жена је његова шурњаја.—Жена мога брата је снаја (ог сна, снаха) мојих родитеља и моја снаја, мој отац је њен свекар, моја мајка је њена свекрва, моја сестра је њена заова, а ја сам њен девер.—Моја жена и жена мога брата су узајамно јетрве. Моја жена и жена мога пријатеља су рођене сестре ; он и ја смо пашенози.

¹ рођен, literally=*born*, from родити=*to give birth to a child* (or *to bear fruit*) ; родити се=*to be born*.

CHAPTER 11

THE FUTURE TENSE OF TO BE

THE future tense of бѣти = *to be*, like that of every other Serbian verb, is formed by means of the auxiliary verb хтѣти = *to wish, to be willing, to want*. It is formed in two ways, either (1) by the shortened form of the present of this verb followed by an infinitive and preceded by the personal pronouns, in which case it resembles the English *I'll be*, or (2) if the personal pronouns are omitted, by the addition of these shortened forms to the stem of another verb.

The full forms of the present of хтѣти are :

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. (ја) хѡху = <i>I wish, I will</i> | (ми) хѡхемо = <i>we will</i> |
| 2. (ти) хѡхеш | (ви) хѡхете |
| 3. (он) хѡхе | (они) хѡхѣ |
| (она) хѡхе | (оне) хѡхѣ |
| (оно) хѡхе | (она) хѡхѣ |

The shortened form which is used in the formation of *any* future consists of the second half of each of these words, viz. ху, хеш, хе, хемо, хете, хе, without accent.

The *first* form of the future of бѣти will therefore be :

- | | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| ја ху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$ | ми хемо бѣти = <i>we shall be</i> |
| ти хеш бѣти = <i>thou wilt be</i> | ви хете бѣти = <i>you will be</i> |
| он хе бѣти = <i>he will be</i> | они хе бѣти |
| она хе бѣти = <i>she will be</i> | оне хе бѣти |
| оно хе бѣти = <i>it will be</i> | она хе бѣти } = <i>they will be</i> |

The *second* form :

- | | |
|--|-----------------------------|
| бѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will be} \\ I \text{ shall be} \end{cases}$ | бѣхемо = <i>we shall be</i> |
| бѣхеш = <i>thou wilt be</i> | бѣхете = <i>you will be</i> |
| бѣхе = <i>he (she, it) will be</i> | бѣхѣ = <i>they will be</i> |

For the *negative* form of the present of *хтѣти* the *short* forms *only* are used, coupled with the negative particle, whether *хтѣти* is used as an independent verb or as an auxiliary, viz.

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not} \\ I \text{ don't wish} \end{cases}$ | 1. (мѣ) нѣхемо |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш | 2. (вѣ) нѣхете |
| 3. (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) нѣхе | 3. $\begin{pmatrix} \text{ѡни} \\ \text{ѡне} \\ \text{ѡна} \end{pmatrix}$ нѣхѣ |

The negative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with *нѣху*, and has only the *one* form :

- | | |
|---|------------------|
| 1. (jâ) нѣху бѣти = $\begin{cases} I \text{ will not be} \\ I \text{ shall not be} \end{cases}$ | (мѣ) нѣхемо бѣти |
| 2. (тѣ) нѣхеш бѣти | (вѣ) нѣхете бѣти |
| 3. (ѡн) нѣхе бѣти | (ѡни) нѣхѣ бѣти |
| (ѡна) нѣхе бѣти | (ѡне) нѣхѣ бѣти |
| (ѡно) нѣхе бѣти | (ѡна) нѣхѣ бѣти |

The negative future of *any* verb is similarly formed.

The *interrogative* form of the present of *хтѣти* is formed thus :

хѡхеш ли (тѣ) ? = *dost thou wish ?*
 хѡхете ли (вѣ) ? = *do you wish ?*

The interrogative future of *бѣти* is accordingly formed with this verb as follows, and *only* in the full form :

хѡхеш ли (тѣ) бѣти ? = *wilt thou be ?*
 хѡхе ли (ѡн, ѡна, ѡно) бѣти ? = *will (he, she, it) be ?*
 хѡхете ли (ви) бѣти ? = *will you be ?*
 хѡхѣ ли (ѡни, ѡне, ѡна) бѣти ? = *will they be ?*

If the personal pronouns are retained they *must* be placed between the interrogative particle and the infinitive, as above.

Emphatic interrogations can be formed with зăр (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

зăр ќе он бѣти ? = *do you mean to say that he will be ?*

зăр ќете вѣ бѣти ? = *do you mean to say that you will be ?*

Or with дă ли (cf. p. 33) and the short forms, e.g.

дă ли ќе (он, она, оно) бѣти ? = *will he be ?*

дă ли ќете (вѣ) бѣти ? = *will you be ?*

If negative interrogative forms are required, they are formed as follows :

нѣќете ли (вѣ) бѣти ? = *won't you be ?*

Or with зăр, cf. p. 34.

зăр нѣќе (он, она, оно) бѣти ? = *do you mean to say he won't be ?*

зăр нѣќете (вѣ) бѣти ? = *do you mean to say you won't be ?*

But such questions can also be asked in the form of an assumption by raising the voice, e.g.

вѣ ќете бѣти ? = *you will be ?*

The present forms of хтѣти are of course also frequently used in their literal meaning corresponding to the English verbs *to wish, to be willing, to want*. The personal pronouns are used only where special emphasis is laid on them. Examples :

хѡћу вѡде, хлѣба, кăфе = *I want some water, bread, coffee.*

Used interrogatively :

хѡћете ли вѡде ? = *will you have some water ?*

хѡћу, мѡлѣм вас = *I will, please (lit. I beg you).*

хвăла, нѣ (or нѣћу) = *thank you, no (I will not).*

The shortened forms are also used sometimes in their literal meaning, e.g.

кѡ ќе вѡде ? = *who wants some water ?* жă ћу = *I do (lit. I want).*

There is another form of the future, known as the *exact future*, which is used only in subordinate sentences. It is formed by means of the perfective present of бѣти (cf. p. 34) and the past participle active :

- | | |
|--------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. бѹдѣм бѣо (бѣла <i>f.</i>) | 1. бѹдѣмо бѣли (бѣле <i>f.</i>) |
| 2. бѹдѣш бѣо (бѣла <i>f.</i>) | 2. бѹдѣте бѣли (бѣле <i>f.</i>) |
| 3. бѹдѣ бѣо | 3. бѹдѹ бѣли |
| бѹдѣ бѣла | бѹдѹ бѣле |
| бѹдѣ бѣло | бѹдѹ бѣла |

This tense is not frequently used in the case of the verb бѣти, because in conditional clauses the perfective present бѹдем is quite sufficient alone, e.g.

кѣд бѹдѣм у Лондону = *when I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

ѣко бѹдѣм у Лондону = *if I am* (lit. *shall be*) *in London.*

But in the case of all other verbs it is extremely common, e.g.

кѣд or ѣко бѹдѣм дѡшао¹ у Лондон = *when or if I shall have come to London.*

CHAPTER 12

INTERROGATIVE AND RELATIVE PRONOUNS AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT, PAST, AND FUTURE OF TO BE

	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Sing.	кѡжѣ	кѡжѣ	кѡжѣ	} = <i>who, which</i>
Pl.	кѡжѣ	кѡжѣ	кѡжѣ	
Sing.	какав	каква	какво	} = <i>of what sort</i>
Pl.	какви	какве	каква	
	or :			
Sing.	какѣ	какѣ	какѡ	
Pl.	какѣ	какѣ	какѣ	

¹ дѡшао, past part. of дѡћи = *to come, to arrive.*

Sing.	коликѣ	коликѣ	коликѣ	} = <i>how big</i>
Pl.	коликѣ	коликѣ	коликѣ	
Sing.	чѣјѣ (or чѣј)	чѣјѣ	чѣјѣ	} = <i>whose</i>
Pl.	чѣјѣ	чѣјѣ	чѣјѣ	

кѣ = *who*, штѣ or штѣ = *what*; кѣликѣ, cf. p. 184

All these may be used as interrogative or relative, and also as indefinite pronouns.

They are declined as follows :

Only in the Sing.

Only in the Sing.

N.	кѣ	штѣ, штѣ
G.	кѣга	чѣга, штѣ
D.	кѣме or кѣму	чѣму
A.	кѣга	штѣ, штѣ
V.	—	—
I.	кѣм or кѣме ¹	чѣм or чѣме ¹
L.	кѣме or кѣм ¹	чѣму or чѣм

Sing. N.	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ
G.	кѣјега	кѣјѣ	кѣјега
D.	кѣјему	кѣјѣ	кѣјему
A.	кѣјѣ or кѣјега ²	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ
V.	—	—	—
I.	кѣјѣм	кѣјѣм	кѣјѣм
L.	кѣјѣм	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣм
Pl. N.	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ
G.	кѣјѣх	кѣјѣх	кѣјѣх
D.	кѣјѣм or кѣјѣма ³	кѣјѣм or кѣјѣ- ма ³	кѣјѣм or кѣјѣ- ма ³
A.	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ	кѣјѣ
V.	—	—	—

¹ Cf. notes 1 and 3 on p. 56.

² Cf. note 2 on p. 65.

³ Cf. foot-note 1 on p. 78.

I. кòјѣм ог кòјѣма¹ кòјѣм ог кòји-ма¹ кòјѣм ог кòји-ма¹

L. кòјѣм ог кòјѣма¹ кòјѣм ог кòји-ма¹ кòјѣм ог кòји-ма¹

Чѣј—чѣјѣ—чѣјѣ is declined exactly like кòјѣ, and like the definite adjectives with a soft stem, cf. врѣѣ, p. 65.

The pronoun кàкàв is declined exactly like the indefinite adjective, cf. жѣт, p. 64. The form кàкѣ and the pronoun кòлѣкѣ are declined like the definite adjective with a hard stem, cf. жѣтѣ, p. 65.

Vocabulary

шѣма (f.) = wood,² forest
пѣт (m.) = road, way, (a) time
(једàнпѣт = once)
имàње (n.) = property (land or fortune)
пòзорѣште (n.) = theatre
кòнцерт (m.) = concert
јàбука (f.) = apple
шѣшѣр (m.) = hat
ѣнѣс (m.) = taste
òдја (f.) = colour

тòрба (f.) = handbag, knapsack
ствàр (f.) = thing
сèлàк (m.) = villager, peasant
дèчкò ог дèчàк (m.) = boy
дèвòјка (f.) = girl
зàтвор (m.) = prison, detention.
рàт (m.) = war
мѣр (m.) = peace
пòдне (indeclinable) = noon (cf. p. 155)
хвàла (f.) = thanks

ѣкѣсан (masc.), -сна (fem.), -сно (neut.) = nice (to taste)
нèпòслѣшан, -шна, -шно =
disobedient

нèуредан, -дна, -дно = untidy
òпàсан, -сна, -сно = dangerous

сѣротан, -тна, -тно = poor
(opp. to rich)
свѣлен, -èна, èно = silken
срèбрн, -рна, -рно = of silver

For the prepositions and adverbs cf. pp. 151, 179.

Serbian Sentences

1. Јà кѣ сѣтра бѣти кòд куѣе, а òн нèке. 2. Гдè ќе òн бѣти ?—Ў шуми. 3. Хòћете ли бѣти дàнàс прè пòдне ў цркви ?—Хòћу (хòћемо). 4. Гдè ћете бѣти дàнàс

¹ Cf. note 3 on p. 56.

² wood, the material, is дрво.

после подне?—Бйћу (ог бйћемо) на рѣци. 5. Хѡћете ли вечѣрас бйти у пѡзорйшту?—Нѣћу (ог нѣћемо), бйћу (ог бйћемо) на кѡнцерту. 6. Зѣр ћете прѣксеутра ѡпѣт бйти на рѣци?!—Хѡћу (ог бйћу). 7. Зѣр (ѡн, ѡна) нѣће бйти јутрѡс у цркви!?!—Нѣће. 8. Хѡћете ли вйна?—Нѣ, хвѣла. 9. Ви нѣћете јѣбӯкѣ?—Нѣ, хвѣла. 10. Ви нѣћете нйкад(а) бйти мѡј прйјатељ! 11. Чйј(и) је ѡвѣј (ог ѡво) шѣшйр?—Мѡј. 12. Чйјѣ је ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) кӯћа?—Нѣгова. 13. Чйје је ѡвѡ дѣте?—Нѣно. 14. Чйји су ѡвй (ог ѡво) капӯти?—Нѣши. 15. Чйје су ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) ствѣри?—Вѣше. 16. Чйја су ѡвѣ (ог ѡво) дѣца?—Нйхова. 17. Кѣкав (ог кѣкй) је вѣш сѣт?—Срѣбрн. 18. Кѣква (ог кѣкѣ) је бйла нѣна хѣлина?—Свилѣна. 19. Кѣкво (ог кѣкѡ) је тѡ вйно?—Врѣло дѡбро. 20. Колйкй је вѣш сйн?—Вѣлыкй дѣчко (ог дѣчѣк). 21. Колйкѣ је вѣша ћѣрка?—Вѣлыка дѣвѡјка. 22. Колйкѡ је нѣгово имѣње?—Врѣло мѣло. 23. Кѡлыко сте пӯта бйли у Лонѡну?—Јѣдѣнпӯт. 24. Кѡјѣ је вѣш брѣт?—Ѳнѡ (је). 25. Кѡјѣ је нѣгова сѣстра?—Ѳнѡ (је). 26. Кѡјѣ је нѣно пѣрѡ?—Тѡ (је). 27. Кѡјѣ су вѣши кѡњи?—Ѳвѡ (су). 28. Кѡјѣ су нйхове кнйге?—Ѳнѡ (су). 29. Шѣшйр, кѡјй је на стѡлицы, нйје мѡј. 30. Ѳнѣ гѡспођѣ, кѡјѣ је бйла блйзу вѣс, нйје нѣгова мѣјка. 31. Нѣгово дѣте, кѡјѣ је увѣк нѣпѡслӯшно, бйће дѣнѣс у зѣтвору. 32. Кѡ је ѡнѣј чѡвек?—Тѡ је вѡјнйк кѡјй је бйѡ у рѣгу. 33. Штѣ је тѡ?—Ѳвѡ су ствѣри кѡјѣ су бйле у нѣговој тѡрбй. 34. Лӯдй чйјѣ су имѣнѣ вѣлыка нйсу сйротнй. 35. Ђѣцй чйјѣ кнйге нйсу чйште, нѣурѣднй су. 36. Кѣд сте бйли кѡд куће?—Ѳнѡмѣд у пѡдне. 37. Јѣ ли мѡј брѣт бйѡ кѡд вѣс јучѣ прѣ пѡдне?—Нйје. 38. Зѣр мѡј ѡѣц нйје бйѡ код нѣга сйноћ?!—Нйје. 39. Прѣкјучѣ сам бйѡ код ѡнога

сељака чија је кућа на брѣгу. 40. Прѣксиноћ нисмо били код куће.

Notes

5. на кѡнцерту=*at the concert* (lit. *on*).

8. вина, Part. Gen.=*some wine*.

9. јабѹка, Part. Gen. Pl.=*some apples*.

11-16. The neuter forms ђвѡ, тѡ, ѡнѡ of the demonstrative pronouns ђвāj, тāj, ѡнāj may be used impersonally for all the genders.

37. код вās=*at your home* (lit. *at you*).

38. код нѣга=*at his home*, but с вāма=*with you*, с нѣм=*with him*.

English Sentences

1. We shall not be at church to-morrow. 2. Where will she be to-day? 3. Will they be on the river to-morrow?—No, they will not. 4. The day after to-morrow we shall be in the theatre (=we shall go to). 5. Will you have some apples?—Yes, I will. 6. Whose coat is this?—It is mine. 7. Whose houses are those?—They are ours. 8. Of what sort (=of what colour *or* material) is his coat?—Woollen.¹ 9. How big is her son? 10. How many² times were you yesterday in the park? 11. Which is his book?—That is. 12. Which are their horses?—These are. 13. The child who was near you is her son. 14. These things were on my chair. 15. Those boys are not poor; their parents are well off. 16. My brother was not at home. 17. Was this boy not at home?—No, he was not. 18. We were not in the theatre the evening before last. 19. His son is an untidy boy. 20. What sort of church is that? 21. That is my handbag. 22. Whose things are those on the table?—They are mine. 23. After noon (=in the a.) we shall be at home. 24. Before noon (=in the morning) they were not at home. 25. What a pretty colour! 26. Of what colour are his eyes and his hair? 27. The taste of this dish is very pleasant. 28. This dish is very nice (to taste). 29. What large apples! whose are they?

¹ вѹнен, from вѹна (f.)=*wool*.

² кѡлико (*adv.*).

CHAPTER 13

THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL (AND THE AORIST) OF TO BE

1. *The Imperative.*

For this, and for all other verbs, special forms exist only for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. For the 3rd pers. sing. and pl. a paraphrase is used, as in English, with the word *нека* = *let* :

Sing. 1. —	Pl. бѹдимо = <i>let us be</i>
2. бѹди = <i>be (thou)</i>	бѹдите = <i>be (you)</i>
3. нека бѹде = <i>let him,</i> <i>her, it, be</i>	нека бѹду = <i>let them be</i>

The negative is formed by prefixing to these forms *не*, e.g. *небуди, небудимо, небудите.*

2. *The Conditional* of this, and of all other verbs, is formed by means of the past participle active (cf. pp. 59, 148), preceded by the *aorist*¹ of the verb *бѣти*. If the personal pronouns are retained the participle comes first; if they are omitted it comes second. When the personal pronouns are retained the forms of the aorist are not accented.

The forms of the aorist of *бѣти* are :

Sing. 1. (jâ) бѣх	Pl. 1. (мѣ) бѣсмо
2. (тѣ) бѣ	2. (вѣ) бѣсте
3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{ѡн} \\ \text{ѡна} \\ \text{ѡно} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{бѣ}$	3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{ѡни} \\ \text{ѡне} \\ \text{ѡна} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{бѣше}$

¹ The aorist still exists in Serbian, as well as the imperfect, but these tenses, though very much used in literature, are rare in conversation; the aorist corresponds to the French *passé défini*, and cf. p. 187.

When these forms are used for the conditional the 3rd pers. plur. бѣше changes into бѣ. Even in the 1st and 2nd pers. plur. this shortened form бѣ is most frequently used instead of бѣсмо and бѣте. The conditional of бѣти therefore is as follows :

Sing. 1. ја бѣх бѣо (бѣла f.) or бѣо (бѣла) бѣх = *I should be, or I should have been*

2. тѣ би бѣо (бѣла f.) ,, бѣо (бѣла) би

3. $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ѡн би бѣо} \\ \text{ѡна би бѣла} \\ \text{ѡно би бѣло} \end{array} \right. \quad \begin{array}{l} \text{бѣо би} \\ \text{бѣла би} \\ \text{бѣло би} \end{array}$

Pl. 1. мѣ би бѣли (бѣле f.) or бѣли (бѣле) би

2. вѣ би бѣли (бѣле f.) ,, бѣли (бѣле) би

$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ѡни би бѣли} \\ \text{ѡне би бѣле} \\ \text{ѡна би бѣла} \end{array} \right. \quad \begin{array}{l} \text{бѣли би} \\ \text{бѣле би} \\ \text{бѣла би} \end{array}$

The negative is formed by putting the negative particle не before the auxiliary verb, e.g.

1. ја не бѣх бѣо or не бѣх бѣо = *I should not be, or I should not have been*

2. вѣ не би бѣли ,, не би бѣли

The interrogative of the conditional of бѣти is most frequently used with да ли, e.g.

да ли би (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would you be ? or would you have been ?*

да ли би (ѡни, ѡне . . .) бѣли (бѣле f.) = *would they (f.) be (or have been) ?*

Also very often with заp, e.g.

заp би (вѣ) бѣли ? = *would you be (or have been) ?*

заp би (ѡн) бѣо . . . ? = *would he be (or have been) ?*

Or in the negative-interrogative form :

заp не би бѣла . . . ? = *would she not be ? or would not she have been ?*

зѣр нѣ би (ѡни) бѣли . . . ? = *would they, &c.*

Such forms as

бѣ ли (вѣ) бѣли (бѣле *f.*) . . . ? бѣ ли (ѡни) бѣли . . . ?
sound bad and are not used.

The English phrase *Would it be better* is translated thus :
дѣ ли би бѣло бѣле ? *Would it be possible* = дѣ ли би бѣло
могѣно (or могѣе) ?

As will have been evident from the examples already given, there is no difference between the future conditional and the past conditional in Serbian,¹ e.g.

Јѣ бих вѡлео (or вѡлела) = *I should like* or *I should have liked.*

At the same time in a subordinate clause following such a sentence a difference can be made between the past and the future by the use of different conjunctions, as follows :

1. *I should be glad* (lit. *I should like*) *if you could do this* =
Јѣ бих вѡлео кѣд (or ѡко) би вѣ ѡво моглѣ урѣдити.

2. *I should have been glad* (lit. *I should have liked*) *if you could have done this* = Јѣ бих вѡлео дѣ ете (вѣ) ѡво моглѣ урѣдити.

3. *I should go to London to-morrow if I were able* = Ышао бих сѣтра у Лондон кѣд (or ѡко) бих могао (могла).

4. *I should have gone to London yesterday if I had been able* = Ышао бих јѣчѣ у Лондон дѣ сам могао.

That is to say, a past conditional clause is rendered by дѣ with the ordinary past tense, while a future conditional clause is rendered by кѣд or ѡко with the conditional; in the principal sentence in each case the conditional is used.

¹ Forms such as *jȃ bix bȃo vȃleo, &c.*, are obsolete.

CHAPTER 14

THE COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE OF
ADJECTIVES

THE **Comparative** is formed by adding the following endings to the stem of the adjectives :

	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>	<i>Neut.</i>
1. Sing.	-jī	-jā	-jē
Pl.	-jī	-jē	-jā
or :			
2. Sing.	-шī	-шā	-шē
Pl.	-шī	-шē	-шā
or :			
3. Sing.	-иjī	-иjā	-иjē
Pl.	-иjī	-иjē	-иjā

1. The following adjectives form the comparative by means of the first group of endings, of which the letter *j* coalesces with the last consonant of the adjectival stem (cf. p. 18, IV):

бѣо¹ = *white*, comp. бѣлī (m.), бѣлā (f.), бѣлē (n.).

бѣсан = *mad, furious* : бѣшнī (m.), бѣшнā (f.), бѣшнē (n.).

блāг = *mild* : блājī (m.), блājā (f.), блājē (n.).

блѣд = *pale* : блѣдī (m.), блѣдā (f.), блѣдē (n.).

брз = *quick* : бржī (m.), бржā (f.), бржē (n.).

врѹх = *hot* : врѹхī² (m.), врѹхā² (f.), врѹхē² (n.).

глѹв = *deaf* : глѹвī (m.), глѹвā (f.), глѹвē (n.).

гѡрак (stem : горк-) = *bitter* : гѡрчī (m.), гѡрчā (f.), гѡрчē (n.).

¹ Originally бел, cf. p. 16.

² More commonly гѡплиjī, comp. of тѡпао = *warm*, and вѡрѣлиjī, comp. of врѣо = *hot*.

- грѹб = *rough*¹: грѹбѣи (m.), грѹбѣѡ (f.), грѹбѣѣ (n.).
 гѹст = *thick*,² *dense*: гѹстѣи (m.), гѹстѣѡ (f.), гѹстѣѣ (n.).
 драг = *dear* (not of price): дражѣи (m.), дражѣѡ (f.),
 дражѣѣ (n.).
 дѹт = *long*: дѹжѣи (m.), дѹжѣѡ (f.), дѹжѣѣ (n.).
 жѣв = *alive, lively*: жѣвѣи (m.), жѣвѣѡ (f.), жѣвѣѣ (n.).
 жѹт = *yellow*: жѹѣи (m.), жѹѣѡ (f.), жѹѣѣ (n.).
 јак = *strong*¹: јачѣи (m.), јачѣѡ (f.), јачѣѣ (n.).
 крѣв = *crooked, wrong, guilty*: крѣвѣи (m.), крѣвѣѡ (f.),
 крѣвѣѣ (n.).
 крѣн = *chipped*: крѣнѣи (m.), крѣнѣѡ (f.), крѣнѣѣ (n.).
 крѹт = *stiff, rigid*: крѹѣи (m.), крѹѣѡ (f.), крѹѣѣ (n.).
 лѡсан = *easy*: лѡшнѣи (m.), лѡшнѣѡ (f.), лѡшнѣѣ (n.).
 лѹд = *mad, stupid*: лѹѣи (m.), лѹѣѡ (f.), лѹѣѣ (n.).
 лѹт = *angry, strong or hot* (of food): лѹѣи (m.), лѹѣѡ (f.),
 лѹѣѣ (n.).
 млѡд = *young*: млѡѣи (m.), млѡѣѡ (f.), млѡѣѣ (n.).
 плѡв = *blue*³ (also *fair* of hair): плѡвѣи (m.), плѡвѣѡ (f.),
 плѡвѣѣ (n.).
 прѣк(ѣ) = *short* (of distance, of temper): прѣчѣи (m.), прѣчѣѡ
 (f.), прѣчѣѣ (n.).
 рѣѣ = *red-haired*: рѣѣи (m.), рѣѣѡ (f.), рѣѣѣ (n.).
 сѣд = *grey-haired*: сѣѣи (m.), сѣѣѡ (f.), сѣѣѣ (n.).
 скѹп = *dear* (only of price): скѹпѣи (m.), скѹпѣѡ (f.),
 скѹпѣѣ (n.).
 сѹв or сѹх = *dry*⁴: сѹвѣи (m.), сѹвѣѡ (f.), сѹвѣѣ (n.).
 тврѣд = *hard*: тврѣѣи (m.), тврѣѣѡ (f.), тврѣѣѣ (n.).
 тѣсан = *tight*: тѣшнѣи (m.), тѣшнѣѡ (f.), тѣшнѣѣ (n.).
 тѣх = *quiet, calm*: тѣшѣи (m.), тѣшѣѡ (f.), тѣшѣѣ (n.).

¹ Literally and figuratively.² Of liquids, also of hair.³ Other words for *blue* are сѣнѣи (= *dark blue*) and, especially of the sea, мѡдар.⁴ *Wet* is мѡкар.

туп = *blunt* (also *stupid*): тупый (*m.*), тупья (*f.*),
тупьё (*n.*).

худ = *poor, thin, miserable*: худый (*m.*), худя (*f.*), худё (*n.*).

чёрн = *black, dark* (of eyes or hair): чёрный (*m.*), чёрня (*f.*),
чёрньё (*n.*).

чвёрст = *firm*: чвёрстый (*m.*), чвёрстя (*f.*), чвёрстё (*n.*).

чѣст = *frequent (dense, of trees)*: чѣстый (*m.*), чѣстя (*f.*),
чѣстё (*n.*).

Besides these, a certain number of adjectives ending in -ак, -ек, -ок, and also the adjectives грдан = *ugly*, дѣбео = *thick, fat* (orig. дѣбел), and шупаль = *hollow*, also form the comparative by means of the above-mentioned endings, which are added directly to the stem after the suffixes -ак, -ек, -ок, -ан, -ел (ео), and -аль have been dropped, e.g.

высок = *high, tall*: вышій (*m.*), вышя (*f.*), вышё (*n.*).

гладак = *smooth*: гладый (*m.*), гладя (*f.*), гладё (*n.*).

грдан = *ugly*: грдый (*m.*), грдя (*f.*), грдё (*n.*).

далек = *far*: дальйй (*m.*), далья (*f.*), дальё (*n.*).

дѣбео = *fat, thick*¹: дѣбыйй (*m.*), дѣбля (*f.*), дѣблё (*n.*).

дубок = *deer*: дубыйй (*m.*), дубля (*f.*), дублё (*n.*).

дугачак = *long* (of things): дужйй (*m.*), дужя (*f.*), дужё (*n.*).

кра́так = *short*: крадыйй (*m.*), крадя (*f.*), крадё (*n.*).

ни́зак = *low*: нйжйй (*m.*), нйжа (*f.*), нйжё (*n.*).

плі́так = *shallow*: плйййй (*m.*), плйя (*f.*), плйё (*n.*).

сла́дак = *sweet*: сладыйй (*m.*), сладя (*f.*), сладё (*n.*).

ў́зак = *narrow*: ўжййй (*m.*), ўжа (*f.*), ўжё (*n.*).

ши́рок = *broad, wide*: шйрййй (*m.*), шйра (*f.*), шйрё (*n.*).

шупаль = *hollow*: шупыйй (*m.*), шупля (*f.*), шуплё (*n.*).

те́жак = *heavy, difficult*: тежййй (*m.*), тежа (*f.*), тежё (*n.*).

2. Only the following four adjectives form the comparative with the second group of endings :

¹ Of solid things.

лѣк = *easy, light* : лѣкшій (m.), лѣкшѣ (f.), лѣкшѣ (n.).

лѣп = *beautiful, pretty* : лѣпшій (m.), лѣпшѣ (f.), лѣпшѣ (n.).

мѣк = *soft, fine* : мѣкшій (m.), мѣкшѣ (f.), мѣкшѣ (n.).

млѣк = *tepid* : млѣкшій ¹ (m.), млѣкшѣ (f.), млѣкшѣ (n.).

3. All the other adjectives form the comparative with the third group of endings, by adding them to the stem, e.g.

стѣр = *old* : стѣрижй (m.), стѣрижѣ (f.), стѣрижѣ (n.).

жѣфтин ² = *cheap* : жѣфтинижй (m.), жѣфтинижѣ (f.), жѣфтинижѣ (n.).

зѣдовѣлан = *content* : зѣдовѣланижй (m.), зѣдовѣланижѣ (f.), зѣдовѣланижѣ (n.).

жѣначан = *courageous* : жѣначанижй (m.), жѣначанижѣ (f.), жѣначанижѣ (n.).

тѣпао = *warm* : тѣплижй (m.), тѣплижѣ (f.), тѣплижѣ (n.).

Cf. the phonetic rules, pp. 17 ff.

The **Superlative** is formed by adding the prefix нѣж- to the comparative, e.g.

нѣждражй = *dearest* (cf. p. 85).

нѣжлѣпшй = *most beautiful*.

нѣждубльй = *deepest*.

нѣжстарижй = *oldest*.

Some adjectives have no positive degree, but only the comparative and superlative, e.g.

гѣрнй = *upper*.

дѣнй ³ = *lower*.

првй = *first*.

пѣследнй = *last*.

прѣднй = *front*.

стрѣжнй (or зѣднй) = *hind, back*.

¹ The form млѣчй is also found.

² From the Greek *εἰρῖνος*.

³ Originally долъни.

88 COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE ADJECTIVES

The comparative and superlative of some adjectives are formed from quite different stems, as in other languages, e.g.

дѡбар (<i>m.</i>) = <i>good</i> ,	бѡлѣй = <i>better</i> ,	нѣјбѡлѣй = <i>best</i> .
зѡо (<i>m.</i>) = <i>bad</i> ,	гѡрѣй = <i>worse</i> ,	нѣјгорѣй = <i>worst</i> .
злѣ (<i>f.</i>)	гѡрѣ	нѣјгорѣ
злѡ (<i>n.</i>)	гѡрѣ	нѣјгорѣ
вѣлики = <i>big</i>	вѣлѣй	нѣјвѣлѣй
мѣли = <i>little</i>	мѣлѣй	нѣјмѣлѣй

The declension of the comparative and superlative adjectives follows that of the definite adjectives, but in the gen. dat. and loc. sing. masc. and neut. they have the endings -ера, -ему, because their stems always end in *j* or *ш*.

Comparison is expressed by нѣго or ѡд, cf. p. 89.

N.B. The verb вѡлети (pres. вѡлѣм, cf. pp. 145, 149) = *to like*, has comparative and superlative forms, viz. вѡлѣјѣм (pres. вѡлѣјѣм) = *to prefer*, for which also вѣшѣ вѡлети is used, and нѣјвѡлети (pres. нѣјвѡлѣм) = *to like best of all*.

CHAPTER 15

EXERCISE ON THE TWO PREVIOUS CHAPTERS

Vocabulary

инжѣнѣр (<i>m.</i>) = <i>engineer</i>	друштво (<i>n.</i>) = <i>society</i>
слѣга (<i>m.</i>) = <i>man-servant</i>	нѣволя (<i>f.</i>) = <i>misery</i>
пѡложѣј (<i>m.</i>) = <i>position</i>	вѣрош (<i>f.</i>) = <i>town, city</i>
вѣчѣ (<i>n.</i>) = <i>evening</i>	грѣд (<i>m.</i>) = <i>city, fortress</i>
мѣсто (<i>n.</i>) = <i>place</i>	стѣн (<i>m.</i>) = <i>apartment, flat</i>
жѣвѡт (<i>m.</i>) = <i>life</i>	
Sing. дѡбар (<i>m.</i>), дѡбра (<i>f.</i>), дѡбро (<i>n.</i>)	} = <i>good</i>
Pl. дѡбри (<i>m.</i>), дѡбре (<i>f.</i>), дѡбра (<i>n.</i>)	
бѡлѣй, бѡлѣ, бѡлѣ = <i>better</i>	издрѣжлив, -ива, -иво = <i>durable, hardy</i>
пѡслѣшѣн, -шна, -шно = <i>obedient</i>	гѡрд, -а, -о = <i>proud, arrogant</i>

празан, -зна, -зно = *empty*
 раван, -вна, -вно = *even, level*
 љубазан, -зна, -зно = *kind,*

amiable

миран, -рна, -рно = *quiet,*
peaceful

срећан, -ћна, -ћно = *happy,*¹
*fortunate*¹

задовольан, -љна, -љно = *con-*
tent, pleased

пријатан, -тна, -тно = *agree-*
able, pleasant

мүзикалан, -лна, -лно = *musical*

корисан,² -сна, -сно = *useful,*
profitable

висок, -а, -о = *high, tall*

скүп, скүпа, -по = *dear, ex-*
pensive

жив, жїва, -во = *alive, lively*

түп, түпа, -по = *blunt*³

тёсан, тёсна, -сно = *tight*

тїх, тїха, -хо = *calm*

брз, брза, -зо = *quick*

сед, седа, -до = *grey-haired*

гүст, гүста, -то = *dense, thick*

дүбок, дүбка, -ко = *deep*

For the prepositions and adverbs, cf. pp. 151, 179.

Comparison is expressed either by *нёго* = *than*; or by *од* (cf. p. 89) = *from*; in the first case the thing compared is in the nom., in the second in the gen.

Reading Exercises

1. Буди дѳбар и пѳслушан. 2. Дѳ ли би вѳше дѳте било бѳље и послушнїјѳ кад⁴ би било у школи?—Било бїѳ.⁵
 3. Будимо издржљиви у невољи. 4. Дѳ ли би вї бїли гѳрди кад би бїли врло бѳгати?—Нѳ бих. 5. Будите љубазни прѳма свѳјим слугама. 6. Нѳка бѳде код свѳјѳ куће сѳтра ѳвече. 7. Нѳка бѳду мїрни на свѳјим мѳстима. 8. Бїо бих мнѳго срећнїј и задовѳљнїј кад би(х) бїо у вѳшѳм пѳложѳју (or usually : . . . дѳ сам у вѳшѳм пѳложѳју). 9. Било би нам ведма пријатно дѳ смо бїли у вѳшѳм друштву. 10. Дѳ сам (or кад би(х) бїла) мѳзикѳлна, бїла бих пѳтнуо срећна. 11. Дѳ ли би било кориснїјѳ за нѳга кад би бїо инжїњѳр?—Бї

¹ *unhappy, unfortunate*, is *несрећан*.

² Also *користан*.

⁴ *кад* or *када* = *if*.

³ *sharp* is *оштар*.

⁵ Or simply : *бїѳ*.

(ог било би). 12. Зар би њихов живот био мирнији кад не би били заједно?—Био би. 13. Зар она не би била задовољнија у својој кући?—Не би. 14. Наша варош била би лепша кад(а) би била пored реке. 15. Мој старији брат је већи (ог виши) од мене (ог . . . него ја). 16. Његово одело је скупље од мога. 17. Најбогатији (с. људи) нису најсрећнији. 18. Најбоље је да будемо добри пријатељи. 19. Лети је живот пријатнији у селу него у вароши. 20. Наш стан је у најживљој улици наше вароши. 21. Ваш нож је много тупљи од мога. 22. Његов капут је сувише тесан за мене. 23. На овоме месту река је најтиша. 24. Њена коза је много црња него моја. 25. Ваши коњи су бржи него моји; они су најбржи у нашем граду. 26. Коза (у) моје мајке је сећа него коза (у) мога оца. 27. У нашем дворишту трава је гушћа него у вашем. 28. Овај бунар је дубљи него тај. 29. Ко је виши, ви или ваш брат?—Ја. 30. Чије су очи црње, његове или њене?—Њене.

English Sentences

1. Do not be proud. 2. Be happy and content. 3. Would he be more obedient in school?—Yes, he would. 4. Are they kind to their men-servants? 5. We should be very glad to be with you. 6. Would she be happier at her home? 7. Would it not be more useful for them to be engineers? 8. We should be happier if we were in his position. 9. My brother is taller than his. 10. Her flat is more expensive than ours. 11. The happiest people are not the richest. 12. It would be better for them to be friends. 13. This street is very quiet. 14. That knife is blunt. 15. Her coat is not tight. 16. Are her horses quicker than yours? 17. Is her hair grey?—No, it is still dark. 18. This well is not deep. 19. Whose eyes are darker, hers or mine? 20. Whose knife is this? It is very sharp. 21. The river is not rapid at this place. 22. This

mountain is higher than that. It is the highest. 23. Beside the river is a thick wood. 24. His hair is thicker and longer than mine. 25. This street is broader than that. 26. This book is thinner and dearer than that. 27. Those books are thicker and cheaper than these. 28. Your church is older and more beautiful than ours. 29. In our town living is dearer than in your village. 30. His suit of clothes is more durable than mine. 31. We were in very pleasant society yesterday.

CHAPTER 16

THE IMPERFECT AND PLUPERFECT OF *TO BE*

1. THE IMPERFECT

THIS tense, like the aorist (cf. p. 81), is much used in literature, but not often in conversation. It is also used as the auxiliary verb to form the *pluperfect*. In conversation both the aorist and the imperfect are almost always replaced by the (compound) past tense (cf. p. 59 f.).

The imperfect of бѣти is :

- | | |
|--------------------------|--|
| 1. (jâ) бѣjax | or бѣх, <i>I was</i> (мѣ) (бѣjаемо) or бѣемо |
| 2. (тѣ) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше | (вѣ) (бѣjате) ,, бѣете |
| 3. { (ѡн) | { (ѡни) |
| { (ѡна) (бѣjаше) ,, бѣше | { (ѡне) (бѣjаху) ,, бѣху |
| { (ѡно) | { (ѡна) |

The forms in brackets are less frequent.

The interrogative, negative, and negative-interrogative forms are formed in the same manner as those of the present.

2. The PLUPERFECT of бѣти is jâ бѣjax бѣо, &c., but it is very seldom used.

CHAPTER 17

THE NUMERALS

THERE are (1) Cardinal, (2) Ordinal, and (3) Collective numerals.

1. Cardinal Numerals

- | | |
|--|-----------|
| 1. jèдан (<i>m.</i>), jèдна (<i>f.</i>), jèдно (<i>n.</i>) | 6. шèст |
| 2. двâ (<i>m.</i>), двê (<i>f.</i>), двâ (<i>n.</i>) | 7. сèдам |
| 3. трî | 8. ðсам |
| 4. чèтири | 9. дèвèт |
| 5. пèт | 10. дèсèт |

The numbers between 11 and 19 are formed by prefixing the numbers from 1 to 9 to the number дèсèт, inserting between them the preposition на = *on to*, whereupon, owing to contraction, the following forms are obtained :

- | | |
|---------------|---------------------------|
| 11. jèдàнаест | 16. шèснаест |
| 12. двâнаест | 17. сèдâмнаест |
| 13. трîнаест | 18. осâмнаест |
| 14. чètрнаест | 19. девèтнаест |
| 15. пèгнаест | 20. двáдесèт ¹ |

The numbers 20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, and 90 are formed by a combination of the numbers 1-9 with 10. The numbers between these are formed as follows :

- | | |
|------------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 21. двáдесет ² и jèдан | 27. двáдесет и сèдам |
| 22. двáдесет и ³ двâ | 28. двáдесет и ðсам |
| 23. двáдесет и ³ трî | 29. двáдесет и дèвèт |
| 24. двáдесет и ³ чèтири | 30. трíдесет ² |
| 25. двáдесет и ³ пèт | 40. чètрдèсèт ² |
| 26. двáдесет и ³ шèст | 50. педèсèт |

¹ Pronounced quickly, двàес.

² Pronounced quickly, двàест, трíест, чètрест.

³ Often pronounced with an accent on the и.

60. шездѣсѣт ¹	400. чѣтири стѣтине
70. седамдѣсѣт	500. пѣт стѣтинѧ ³
80. осамдѣсѣт	600. шѣст стѣтинѧ
90. деведѣсѣт	700. сѣдам стѣтинѧ
100. стѣ о҃г стѣтина	800. ѣсам стѣтинѧ
101. сто јѣдан, &c.	900. дѣвѣт стѣтинѧ
200. двѣста о҃г две стѣтине ²	1000. хѣљада о҃г тѣсуѣа
300. трѣста о҃г три стѣтине	2000. двѣ хѣљаде, &c.

Only the numbers јѣдан, двѧ, трѣ, чѣтири, стѣтина, and хѣљада (or тѣсуѣа) are declined. The last three are declined like feminine substantives, cf. жѣна, p. 47. The number јѣдан is declined like the pronoun ѡвѧј, cf. p. 56. It varies according to gender as follows : јѣдан (*m.*), јѣдна (*f.*), јѣдно (*n.*).

Двѧ (*m.*), двѣ (*f.*), двѧ (*n.*) is declined as follows :

Nom. двѧ (<i>m., n.</i>)	двѣ (<i>f.</i>)	Acc. двѧ (<i>m., n.</i>)	двѣ (<i>f.</i>)
Gen. двѧју	двѣју	Inst. двѧма	двѣма
Dat. двѧма	двѣма	Loc. двѧма	двѣма

In the same way are declined the two following words :

ѡба (<i>m., n.</i>), ѡбе (<i>f.</i>)	} = both.
ѡбадвѧ (<i>m., n.</i>), ѡбадвѣ (<i>f.</i>)	

The numbers трѣ and чѣтири are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. трѣ (<i>m., f., n.</i>), чѣтири (<i>m., f., n.</i>)
Gen. трѣју (<i>m., f., n.</i>), чѣтрѣју (<i>m., f., n.</i>)
Dat., Instr., Loc. трѣма (<i>m., f., n.</i>), чѣтрѣма (<i>m., f., n.</i>)

If the numbers двѧ, ѡба, ѡбадвѧ, трѣ, and чѣтири follow a preposition they are not usually declined, e.g. у двѧ (or трѣ) сѧта = *at two o'clock*, с чѣтири књѣге = *with four books*, cf. p. 155.

The number јѣдан, -а, -о, is very often used with an

¹ Pronounced quickly, шѣсѣт. ² This is *gen. sing.*, cf. p. 97.

³ This is *gen. pl.*, cf. p. 97.

indefinite meaning, corresponding to the English indefinite article, e.g.

јѣдан чѡвек = *a man*.

јѣдна жѣна = *a woman*.

јѣдно дѣте = *a child*.

N.B. *One of* is rendered as follows : јѣдан од вѣс = *one of you*, but јѣдан мѡј пријатељ = *one of my friends*.

2. Ordinal Numerals

These are really adjectives used in the definite forms and are declined like them. From 5 to 99 they are formed by adding -и to the cardinal numerals. The numbers 1-4, 100, 1000, are different, e.g.

- | | |
|--------------------------------|------------------------|
| 1. прѡѡ = <i>first</i> | 19. девѣтнаестѡ |
| 2. друѡѡ = <i>second</i> , &c. | 20. двѣдѣсѣтѡ |
| 3. трѣѡѡ | 21. двѣдѣсѣт прѡѡ, &c. |
| 4. чѣтѡрѡѡ | 30. трѡдѣсѣтѡ |
| 5. пѣтѡ | 40. чѣтрѣсѣтѡ |
| 6. шѣстѡ | 50. пѣдѣсѣтѡ |
| 7. сѣдмѡ | 60. шѣздѣсѣтѡ |
| 8. ѡсмѡ | 70. сѣдамдѣсѣтѡ |
| 9. дѣвѣтѡ | 80. ѡсамдѣсѣтѡ |
| 10. дѣсѣтѡ | 90. дѣведѣсѣтѡ |
| 11. јѣдѡнаестѡ | 100. стѡтѡ |
| 12. двѡнаестѡ | 200. двѣстѡтѡ |
| 13. трѡнаестѡ | 300. трѡстѡтѡ |
| 14. чѣтрѡнаестѡ | 400. чѣтиристѡтѡ |
| 15. пѣтнаестѡ | 500. пѣтстѡтѡ, &c. |
| 16. шѣснаестѡ | 1000. хѡѡадѡтѡ |
| 17. сѣдѡмнаестѡ | 1001. хѡѡадѡ прѡѡ |
| 18. ѡсамнаестѡ | 2000. двѣхѡѡадѡтѡ, &c. |

3. Collective Numerals

These are used only in the plural for all genders, and in the neuter singular.

<i>Pl. Masc. Fem. Neut.</i>	<i>Neut. sing.</i>
2. двоји, двоје, двоја	двоје, обоје
3. трџи, &c.	трџе
4. четвори	четворо
5. пѣтори	пѣторо
6. шѣстори	шѣсторо
7. сеѣдмори	сеѣдморо
8. ѣсмори	ѣсморо
9. дѣветори	дѣветоро
10. дѣсетори, &c.	дѣсеторо, &c.

The plural collectives are used with such substantives as are only used in the plural (cf. p. 30) or as pairs, e.g.

двоји волови = 2 *pairs*¹ of *oxen*.

трџе чарапе = 3 *pairs* of *stockings*.

четворе новине = 4 *newspapers*.

четвора кола = 4 *carriages*

(кола, or more usually точак = *wheel*,² чѣтири кола, or точка = 4 *wheels*; точак also = a *bicycle*).

These are declined like the plural of мџ.

The neut. sing. collectives are used especially when numbers of living things of mixed genders are indicated. They require the genitive, e.g. било нас је трџе у врту а двоје у кући = *there were three of us (men and women) in the garden and two in the house*. When people, both men and women, are indicated, the word људи³ (cf. pp. 30, 48) is

¹ A pair is also пѣр.

² Is also the name of the national Serbian dance.

³ Pl. N. V. људи, G. људи, D. I. L. људима, A. људе.

usually replaced by *ѣх* or *ѣѣх* (= *of them*), e.g. *тѣмо ѣх је чѣтворо* or *ѣѣх је тѣмо чѣтворо* = *there are four people there*; *чѣтворо љѣди* by itself = *four people*. They are also used frequently with collective nouns (cf. p. 57), which are then put in the genitive, e.g. *двѣје дѣце* (gen. of *дѣца*) = *a couple of children*, though one can also say *двѣ дѣтета* (gen. of *дѣте*); *трѣје пѣлѣди* (gen. of *пѣлѣд*) = *three chickens*, but one can also say *трѣ пѣлета* (gen. of *пѣле*). One says *пѣторо брѣѣ* (gen. of *брѣѣ*, cf. p. 47) = *five brothers*, but *двѣ*, *трѣ*, *чѣтири брѣѣ* (gen. of *брѣѣ*, cf. p. 44) = 2, 3, 4 *brothers*. One says *двѣ*, *трѣ*, *чѣтири чѣвека* = 2, 3, 4 *men*, but *пѣт*, *шѣст*, &c., *љѣди* = 5, 6, &c., *men*. Feminine nouns are always preceded by cardinal numerals, e.g. *двѣ жѣне* (cf. p. 47) = *two women*, *трѣ сѣстрѣ* = *three sisters*.

These neut. sing. collectives are declined as follows :

Nom. Acc. *двѣје*, *трѣје*, *чѣтворо*.

Gen. *двѣѣ*, *трѣѣ*, *чѣтѣѣѣ*.

Dat. Inst. Loc. *двѣѣ*, *трѣ(ѣ)ѣ*, *чѣтѣѣѣ*.

All the collective numbers ending in *-ѣѣ* are declined like *чѣтворо*.

All these collectives are seldom used except in the nom. and acc., and after prepositions usually remain in the nom.

4. From the collective numerals are derived feminine substantives ending in *-ѣѣ*, which have the functions of *numerals* and are used only of *men*, e.g.

двѣѣѣ = *two men*

чѣтѣѣѣѣѣ

ѣѣѣѣѣ = *both men*

пѣтѣѣѣѣѣ

трѣѣѣѣѣ

шѣстѣѣѣѣѣ, &c.

One can also say *двѣ чѣвека*, but one *only* says *двѣ брѣѣ*, *трѣ ѣѣѣѣѣ*, when category is specified.

5. The distributive numerals are formed by putting the preposition *по* before the cardinal numerals, e.g.

пѡ јѣдан = <i>at the rate of</i>	пѡ чѣтири
<i>one, or one each</i>	пѡ дѣсет
пѡ двѧ	пѡ стѡ
пѡ трѣ	пѡ хѣладу

6. Multiplicative numerals are formed also from the cardinal numerals by putting after them the noun пѣт = *way, road, a time*, e.g.

јѣданпѣт = *once*, or јѣдан пѣт.

двѧпѣт = *twice*, or двѧ пѣта.

трѣпѣт = *three times*, or трѣ пѣта.

чѣтири пѣт = *four times*, or чѣтири пѣта, &c.

7. Fractional numerals :

$\frac{1}{2}$ = (јѣдна) полѡвина	$\frac{1}{10}$ = (јѣдна) дѣсѣтина
$\frac{1}{3}$ = (јѣдна) трѣћина	$1\frac{1}{2}$ = јѣдан ѣ пѡ
$\frac{1}{4}$ = (јѣдна) четвѣртина	$3\frac{1}{2}$ = трѣ ѣ пѡ
$\frac{1}{5}$ = (јѣдна) пѣтина	$10\frac{1}{2}$ = дѣсѣт ѣ пѡ

Notes

After all the numbers from 5–20 inclusive, from 25–30 inclusive, &c., the gen. pl. is used ; after the numbers 2, 3, 4, 22, 23, 24, 32, 33, 34, &c., the gen. sing.,¹ e.g.

пѣт књѣгѧ = 5 *books*.

двѧ књѣге = 2 *books*.

дѣсѣт дѣвојѧкѧ = 10 *girls*.

After all such numbers as 21, 31, 41, &c., the substantive is in the nom. sing., e.g. двѧдѣсѣт и јѣдна гѡдина = 21 *years*.

трѣ дѣвѡјке = 3 *girls*.

трѣ дѣтѣта = 3 *children*

(or : трѡје дѣцѣ = 'a 3 of children').

¹ This is really the old Dual Number whose use became extended to the numbers 3 and 4.

When an adjective comes between the numerals 2, 3, 4, &c., and the noun, it is put in the gen. sing. of the indefinite form, e.g. *два главна града* or *две главне вароши* = *the two principal towns*; after 5, &c., in the gen. pl., e.g. *пет главних села* = *the five chief villages*; these remain unchanged after prepositions, e.g. *са две* (or *дво*) *своје руке* = *with one's two hands*.

The phrase *What is the date to-day?* is translated: *Који је* (sc. *датум*) *дана*?

The phrase *What is the day of the week?* is translated: *Који је дан данас?*

In expressing the date only the last of each series of numbers is an ordinal number, e.g.

дана је *тридесет први* (sc. *дан*) *јануар хиљаду девет стотина седмнаесте године* = *to-day is the 31st (of) January 1917*; it is to be noticed that in such phrases the *month* is in the nominative, *thousand* is in the accusative,¹ 9 is in the nominative, 100 is in the genitive after 9 (cf. p. 97), and 17 is in the genitive singular, as is also *year*, i.e. *of the seventeenth year*.

In such phrases as *on the 31st . . .* the genitive is used without any preposition, e.g.

Кад сте рођени? = *When were you born?*

Другог фебруара хиљаду осам стотина деведесет треће године = *On the 2nd of February 1893*.

The time of day is expressed as follows:

Колико је сати? = *What time is it?* (lit. *how many is it*

¹ The reason is not clear, but *стотина* and *хиљада* are often put in the *acc.* when another case would be expected; it is a sort of indeclinable form and can be governed by a preposition, e.g. *у хиљаду осам стотина деведесет деветиј години* = *in the year 1899* (loc. after *y*).

² Irregular gen. pl. of *сат*, originally *сэхат* (a Turkish word).

of hours?). Answers: *jèdan càt*=1 o'clock, *dvâ càta*=2 o'clock, *pêt càti*=5 o'clock.

The parts of an hour are expressed as follows: *pòla dvâ* or *jèdan ÿ po or jèdan* и *тpидесѣт*=1.30.

<i>dvâ</i> и <i>pètnaest</i>	} = 2.15.
<i>dvâ</i> и <i>чѣтвѣрт</i> (or <i>фрѣтѣлѣ</i>)	
<i>чѣтвѣрт</i> (or <i>фрѣтѣлѣ</i>) <i>прòшло</i> ¹ <i>dvâ</i>	
<i>pètnaest</i> (<i>минута</i>) <i>прòшло</i> <i>dvâ</i>	

All these are commonly used, though the first is considered the best. The word *фрѣтѣлѣ* comes from the German word *Viertel*=quarter, and does not sound well.

<i>dvânaest</i> и <i>тpидесѣт</i> и <i>pêt</i>	} = 12.35.
<i>dvâdesѣт</i> и <i>pêt</i> (<i>минута</i>) <i>до jèdan</i>	
<i>pêt</i> <i>минута</i> <i>прòшло</i> <i>pòla jèdan</i>	

<i>dvânaest</i> и <i>чѣтpдесѣт</i> и <i>pêt</i>	} = 12.45.
<i>чѣтвѣрт</i> (or <i>фрѣтѣлѣ</i>) <i>до</i> (or <i>на</i>) <i>jèdan</i>	
<i>тpѣ чѣтвѣртѣ</i> (or <i>фрѣтѣлѣ</i>) <i>на jèdan</i>	
<i>pètnaest</i> (<i>минута</i>) <i>до jèdan</i>	

у кòлико càти . . . ? = at what o'clock?

у чѣтиpи càта = at 4 o'clock.

у pêt càти = at 5 o'clock.

CHAPTER 18

THE USE OF THE NUMERALS

Vocabulary

dân (*m.*) = day

минут (*m.*) = minute

недѣлѣ (*f.*) = week

година (*f.*) = year

пйле (*n.*)

пйлѣд (*f. pl.*)

pêd (*m.*) = row (e.g. of chairs)

} = chicken

¹ Literally = 15 gone 2.

Reading Exercise

1. Два ученика, три ученице и четири учитеља су у школи. 2. Шест ученица и пет ученика нису били у цркви. 3. Ми имамо¹ дванаест учитеља у нашој школи. 4. Синоћ је у нашем друштву било седам људи, девет госпођа, три девојке и пет дечака. 5. Дан и ноћ имају¹ двадесет и четири часа (ог сата); један сат има¹ шездесет минута, а један минут шездесет секунда. 6. Један месец има или двадесет и осам или двадесет и девет или тридесет дана или тридесет и један дан. 7. Једна година има три стотине (ог триста) шездесет и пет или шездесет и шест дана. 8. У једној години има дванаест месеци, у месецу има четири недеље. 9. Ми смо у двадесетом веку, у хиљаду девет стотина седмнаестој години. 10. Ја сам био у Београду хиљаду осам стотина осамдесет шесте године. 11. Кад сте били у Лондону?—Био сам хиљаду осам стотина деведесет девете. 12. Оба брата су ми жива. 13. Обе његове сестре биле су у Паризу. 14. Први пут сам био код вас кад ми је било тринајест година. 15. Обдојца су здрави. 16. Трђа кола су пред кућом. 17. Седморо деце није било у школи. 18. Двадесеторо људи било је у цркви. 19. У врту је само четворо јагњади (ог у врту су само четири јагњета. 20. Четворица нису Енглези а трдојца јесу. 21. Десеторица су Срби а дванаесторица су Руси. 22. Трђе пилади је у шуми (ог три пилета су . . .). 23. У свакој клупи има по два ђака. 24. У сваком реду је (ог су) по четири војника. 25. Трипут су били у Лондону. 26. Седам пута сам био у Паризу. 27. То је један од мојих најбољих пријатеља.

¹ Verb имати = *to have*, cf. p. 104.

PART II

CHAPTER 19

THE VERBS

THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE AND THE PRESENT

THE Serbian verb has the following parts : the present, the past (compound past or perfect), the imperfect, the aorist, the pluperfect, the future, the exact future, the conditional, the imperative, the infinitive, the present and past indeclinable participles (or gerunds), the past participles (declinable) active and passive.

The present, imperfect, and aorist are simple tenses ; the future, past (compound perfect), pluperfect, and conditional are compound tenses. Serbian strictly speaking possesses only one voice, the active ; the passive is expressed by means of auxiliary verbs and the passive participle.

There is no subjunctive mood.

The commonest parts of the verb in general (conversational) use are : the present, past, future, conditional, imperative, and infinitive.

In order to form the parts of the verb it is necessary to know the infinitive and the present, because very often the present stem, from which are formed the present tense and the imperative, is different from the infinitive stem, from which are formed the infinitive, past, future, and conditional.

The infinitive of most verbs ends in -ти, and this is usually joined to the root of the verb by the following connecting vowels or syllables : -а-, -ова- (-ева-, -ива-), -ну-, -и-, and -е-, e.g. зв-а-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ова-ти = *to believe*,

им-а-ти = *to have*, дѣг-ну-ти = *to lift*, ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*, вид-е-ти = *to see*. Зва-, верова-, има-, дигну-, учи-, виде-, are called the *infinitive stem*.

Sometimes the ending -ти is added directly to the root of the verb, e.g. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѹ-ти- = *to hear*, пѣ-ти = *to drink*; when the root of such verbs ends in a guttural (г, к, х), this last coalesces with the т of the infinitive ending and forms **ћ**, e.g.

мѡћи = *to be able*, derived from мог-ти

рѣћи = *to tell*, „ „ рек-ти

лѣћи = *to lie down*, „ „ лег-ти

сѣћи = *to cut*, „ „ сек-ти

врћи or врѣћи = *to thresh*, „ вр(е)х-ти

When the root of such verbs ends in a dental (д or т), this last by a process of dissimilation becomes с, e.g.

плѣсти = *to plait, to knit*, derived from плет-ти

краѣсти = *to steal*, „ „ крад-ти

The root of these verbs is thus disguised in the infinitive, but reappears in the present and in other parts of the verb.

The present is formed by adding the personal endings to the root, to which they are joined by the following connecting vowels or syllables, -е-, -не-, -је-, -и-, -а-, e.g. зѡв-ѣ-м = *I call*, дѣг-нѣ-м = *I lift*, чѹ-јѣ-м = *I hear*, им-ѡ-м = *I have*, ѹч-ѣ-м = *I learn*.

Verbs which have -ова-, -ива-, and -ева- as the connecting syllable in the infinitive, have -yje- in the present, e.g. вѣр-ѹ-м = *I believe*; the syllable -ова-, &c., arose as the result of forms such as вер-у-а-ти; this is a double formation, two syllables (-у-а-, -у-је-) connecting the root with the infinitive and the present endings.

When the ending -е-м is added to verbs with the root in a guttural, г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. сек-е-м (inf. сѣћи,

cf. p. 18) becomes *сѣч-ѣ-м* = *I cut*, but the ending of the 3rd pers. pl., which is *-y* and is added without any connecting vowel, does not affect such roots, e.g. *сѣк-y* = *they cut*.

When the ending *-е-м* is added to verbs with the root in a dental, this last remains, e.g. *плѣт-ѣ-м* = *I plait, I knit*.

The verb *мѡѣи* has the form *мѡry* for both 1st pers. sing. and 3rd pers. pl., but in the other persons *г* becomes *ж*, e.g. *мѡж-е* = *he can*.

Such forms as *зове-*, *дигне-*, *чује-*, *има-*, *учи-*, *верује-*, *може-*, *тресе-*, *плете-*, are called the *present stem*.

From this it will be seen that it is impossible to deduce the present from the infinitive, although in a large number of verbs the stem of both happens to be the same.

The verbs are divided into *four* classes according to the vowels or syllable which connects the root with the personal endings of the present: *-е-*, *-не-*, *-је-*, and *-и-*; those with the connecting vowel *-а-* are really a subdivision of the *-је* verbs, but are so numerous and common that they are here treated as a *fifth* class.

Of actual kinds of present endings (consisting of connecting vowel and personal ending) there are only *three*, viz.

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	-ѣм	-ѣм	-ѣм
2.	-ѣш	-ѣш	-ѣш
3.	-ѣ	-ѣ	-ѣ
Pl. 1.	-ѣмо	-ѣмо	-ѣмо
2.	-ѣте	-ѣте	-ѣте
3.	-ѣ (e-jŷ)	-ajŷ	-ѣ

The three forms of the present are here given in full:

I. *трѣсти* = *to shake*; II. *ѣмати*¹ = *to have*; III. *ѣчити* = *to learn, to teach*.

¹ In Serbian this verb is used only in its literal meaning, and not as an auxiliary, but cf. p. 118.

104 THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE

I. (jā) трѣсѣм, <i>I shake</i> , &c.	(mî) трѣсѣмо
(tî) трѣсѣш	(vî) трѣсѣте
(ôh) (òна) (òно) трѣсѣ	(òни) (òне) (òна) трѣсѣ
II. (jā) ѣмѣм, <i>I have</i> , &c.	(mî) ѣмѣмо
(tî) ѣмѣш	(vî) ѣмѣте
(ôh) (òна) (òно) ѣмѣ	(òни) (òне) (òна) ѣмажѣ
III. (jā) ѣчимъ, <i>I learn, I teach</i> , &c.	(mî) учѣмо
(tî) ѣчиш	(vî) учѣте
(ôh) (òна) (òно) ѣчи	(òни) (òне) (òна) ѣчѣ

That is to say, for practical purposes, the present endings of the verbs of the first three classes (-e-, -ne-, -je-) are the same.

According to their infinitives, i.e. the vowels or syllables which connect the root with the infinitive ending, the verbs fall into a far larger number of divisions which are distributed amongst the above-mentioned classes.

Of actual kinds of infinitive endings (consisting of connecting vowel or syllable and infinitive ending) there are *four*; a *fifth* category consists of those verbs in which the infinitive ending -ти is added directly to the root, viz.

1. трѣс-ти = *to shake*, чѣ-ти = *to hear*.
2. звѣ-а-ти = *to call*, вѣр-ѣв-а-ти = *to believe*, ѣм-а-ти = *to have*.
3. дѣл-ну-ти = *to lift*.

4. Ѹч-и-ти = *to learn*.

5. вид-е-ти = *to see*.

The following list gives a picture of the commonest kinds of verbs divided into the five classes according to the present stem with subdivisions according to the infinitive stem.

I.

Connecting vowel -е-.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root :

трѣс-ти = *to shake*, root трес-, pres. stem тресе-, pres.

трѣсѣм = *I shake* ¹ (trans.).

плѣс-ти = *to knit*, root плет-, pres. stem плете-, pres. плѣ-

тѣм = *I knit*.

сѣѣ-ти = *to cut*, root сек-, pres. stem сече-, pres. сѣчѣм = *I cut*.²

грѣпсти = *to scratch*, root рѣб-, pres. stem рѣбе-, pres.

грѣбѣм = *I scratch*.

2. Infinitive ending preceded by -е-, which is part of the original root : ³

Ѹзѣ-ти = *to take*, root -е- (Ѹз- is a prefix and -е- is the remains of an old nasal vowel, which reappears in the present ; this verb never appears except compounded), pres. stem узме-, pres. Ѹзмѣм = *I take*. Cf. Ѹт-ѣ-ти = *to take away*, pres. Ѹтмѣм.

пѸчѣ-ти = *to begin*, root -че- (also resulting from an old nasal vowel), pres. stem почне-, pres. пѸчнѣм = *I begin*.

мрѣ-ти = *to die*, root мре- (derived from меп-), pres. stem мре-, pres. мрѣм = *I die*.

Special mention must be made of the verb дѸ-нѣ-ти = *to*

¹ трѣсти се, *intrans.* = *to tremble*.

² N.B. *to cut the hair* is шѸшати (Class III, 2 b) рѸсу, lit. *to shear the hair*.

³ To this class also belongs насѸти = *to fill up (to pour out)*, cf. p. 208), pres. насѣм.

bring, and other compounds of -нести; -не- is contracted from -несе-, and the present of this verb is донесѣм = *I bring*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -а- :

зв-ѧ-ти = *to call*,¹ root зв- or зов-, pres. stem зове-, pres. зовѣм = *I call*.

пр-ѧ-ти = *to wash* (trans.), root пр- or пер-, pres. stem пере-, pres. перѣм = *I wash* (cf. p. 142).

Note. Not all verbs in this division lose the vowel of the root in the infinitive.

II.

Connecting syllable -не- in the present and -ну- in the infinitive (for these verbs cf. p. 128).

диг-ну-ти = *to lift*, root диг-, pres. stem дигне-, pres. дигнѣм = *I lift*.

тò-ну-ти = *to sink, to drown* (intrans.), root то- (originally топ-), pres. stem тоне-, pres. тònѣм = *I am sinking, I am drowning*.

Note. Many verbs which originally belonged to the first class, and have retained infinitives like those of that class, have now presents according to the second class, e.g.

лѣжи = *to lie down*, root лег-, pres. stem легне-, pres. лѣгнѣм = *I lie down*.

сѣсти = *to sit down*, root сед-, pres. stem седне-, pres. сѣднѣм = *I sit down*.

помòжи = *to help*, root (по)мòг-, pres. stem помогне-, pres. помòгнѣм = *I help*.

Similarly the verb стѧти = (1) *to stand still*, (2) as an auxiliary *to begin*, has as its present стѧнѣм, as have also its

¹ звѧти се = *to be called, named*, pres. зовѣ се = *is called*, како се зовѣ . . . = *what is the name of* . . .

numerous compounds, e.g. *òстати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстанѣм*, which are the *perfective* verbs (cf. p. 129) corresponding in meaning to the compounds of *-стајати*, which are *imperfective* and belong to Class III, 2 a, e.g. *òстајати* = *to remain*, pres. *òстајѣм*, *пòстати*, pres. *пòстанѣм* *perfective* and *пòстајати*, pres. *пòстајѣм* *imperfective* = *to become*.

Conversely many verbs of Class II omit the syllable *-ну-* in the formation of the past (compound) tense, e.g. *дѣгнути*, past participle active *дѣгнуо*, *дѣгнула* or *дѣгаѡ*, *дѣглѡ*, cf. p. 139, i.e. go into Class I.

III.

Connecting syllable *-je-*.

1. Infinitive ending added directly to root.

a. Roots ending in vowels :

чу-ти = *to hear*, root and inf. stem *чу-*, pres. stem *чу-je-*, pres. *чујѣм* = *I hear*.

пѣ-ти = *to drink*, root and inf. stem *пи-*, pres. stem *пи-je-*, pres. *пѣјѣм* = *I drink*.

b. Roots ending in consonants :

млѣ-ти (derived from *мел-ти*) = *to grind*, root *мел-* (inf. stem *мле-*), pres. stem *меље-* (= *мел + je*), pres. *мѣљѣм* = *I grind*.

жѣти or *жѣѣти* (derived from *жен-ти*) = *to reap*, root *жен-* (inf. stem *же-* or *жѣе-*), pres. stem *жѣе-* or *жаѣе-*, pres. *жѣѣм* or *жаѣѣм* = *I reap*.

пѣти се (derived from *пен-ти*) = *to climb*, root *пен-* (inf. stem *пе-*), pres. stem *пеѣе-*, pres. *пѣѣм се* = *I climb*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by *-a-*.

a. In these verbs when the root ends in a vowel, *-j-* or *-в-* is inserted in the infinitive (and also of course in those

parts of the verb derived from it), in order to avoid the hiatus, e.g.

бръ-*я*-ти = *to shave* (trans.), root бръ-, inf. stem бръја-,
pres. stem бръ-*је*, pres. бръжѐм = *I shave*.¹

да-*в*-а-ти = *to give*, root да-, inf. stem дава-, pres. stem
да-*је*, pres. дажѐм = *I give*.

b. In these verbs, when the root ends in a consonant, this last coalesces with the -*ј*- of the connecting syllable in the manner already described on pp. 18, 103, e.g.

мѣт-а-ти = *to put*, root мет-, inf. stem мета-, pres. stem
меѣ- (= мет + *је*), pres. мѣжѐм = *I put*.

лѣг-а-ти = *to (tell a) lie*, root лѣг-, inf. stem лѣга-, pres. stem
лѣже- (= лѣг + *је*), pres. лѣжѐм = *I lie*.

помѣгати = *to help*, root -маг-, inf. stem по-мага-, pres. stem
помаже- (= маг + *је*), pres. помѣжѐм = *I help*.

плѣк-а-ти = *to weep*, root плѣк-, inf. stem плѣка-, pres. stem
плѣче- (= плѣк + *је*), pres. плѣчѐм = *I weep*.

јѣх-а-ти = *to ride*, root јѣх-, inf. stem јѣха-, pres. stem јѣше-
(= јѣх + *је*), pres. јѣшѐм = *I ride*.

вѣз-а-ти = *to bind, to tie*, root вѣз-, inf. stem вѣза-, pres.
stem веже- (= вѣз + *је*), pres. вѣжѐм = *I bind*.

пис-а-ти = *to write*, root пис-, inf. stem писа-, pres. stem
пише- (= пис + *је*), pres. пишѐм = *I write*.

пѣс-а-ти = *to send*, root -сл-, inf. stem -сѣа-, pres. stem
-шѣе-, pres. пѣшѐм = *I send*.

Note. In this verb the soft (or palatal) quality of the sound *j* has affected the *c* over the *п*; this verb is perfective (cf. p. 125), the imperfective form is слѣти, the pres. of which is слѣжѐм (or шѣжѐм).

тиц-а-ти се = *to concern*, root тѣц-, inf. stem тѣца-, pres. stem
тѣче-, pres. тѣче се (3rd pers. sing.) = *it concerns*.

¹ *to get shaved (pfe.)* is обръјати се.

In the verbs of this class, when the root ends in -м, -п, or -б, л is inserted in the present and those parts derived from it, e.g.

(х)пáм-а-ти = *to limp, to go lame*, root (х)пам-, inf. stem храма-, pres. stem храмље- (from храм + је), pres. хрáмљем = *I limp*.

In the verbs of this class, when j is contained in the root it is absorbed in the present, e.g.

кашлѣ-а-ти = *to cough*, root кашлѣ-, inf. stem кашља-, pres. stem кашље-, pres. кáшљем = *I cough*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -ова-, -ива-¹, -(j)ева-¹, and sometimes -ава-; pres. endings joined to the root by -уј(e)-, e.g.

вѣр-ова-ти = *to believe*, root вер-, inf. stem верова-, pres. stem верује-, pres. вѣрујем = *I believe*.

показ-ѣва-ти = *to show*, root (по)-каз-, inf. stem показива-, pres. stem показује-, pres. покáзујем = *I show*.

вој-ѣва-ти = *to make war*, root вој-, inf. stem војева-, pres. stem војује-, pres. вòјујем = *I make war*.

4. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -е-; pres. endings joined to the root by -е-, contracted from -еје-, e.g. љм-е-ти = *to know how*, root љм-, inf. and pres. stem љме-, pres. љмѣм = *I know how*.

Note. The only other common verbs like this are пазѹ-мети = *to understand*, pres. пазѹмѣм, and смѣти = *to dare, to be allowed*, pres. смѣм. N.B. the 3rd pers. pl. of these three verbs ends, not in -у, cf. p. 103, but in -еју, e.g. љмејѹ = *they know how*, пазѹмејѹ = *they understand*, смѣјѹ = *they dare*.

It is important to notice that the verb смѣјати се = *to laugh* belongs to category III, 2 a (cf. p. 115), *I laugh* = смѣјем се, *they laugh* = смѣјѹ се.

¹ N.B. Not all verbs in -ивати and -евати belong to this class, cf. умівати, p. 114, 144, півати, p. 144.

IV.

Connecting vowel -a- in both present and infinitive; the presents of these verbs were originally formed with the connecting syllables -aje-, which became contracted to -a- (cf. p. 103).

им-а-ти = *to have*, root им-, inf. and pres. stem има-, pres. *имам* = *I have*.

V.

Connecting vowel -и-.

1. Infinitive and present endings joined to the root by -и-, e.g.

уч-и-ти = *to learn*, root уч-, inf. and pres. stem учи-, pres. *учим* = *I learn*.

2. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -е-, pres. endings by -и-, e.g.

вид-е-ти = *to see*, root вид-, inf. stem виде-, pres. stem види-, pres. *видим* = *I see*.

3. Infinitive ending joined to the root by -а-, pres. endings by -и-¹; this -а- in the infinitive, and in those parts of the verb derived from it, was originally -е-, as in *видети*, but this was a long ē, which had the effect, when the root of such verbs ended in a guttural, of changing the guttural into a palatal consonant, while itself became а, e.g.

држ-а-ти = *to hold*, root држ-, inf. stem држа- (from др҃г-ē), pres. stem држи-, pres. *држим* = *I hold*.

трч-а-ти = *to run*, root трч-, inf. stem трча- (from тр҃ч-ē), pres. stem трчи-, pres. *трчим* = *I run*.

When such roots ended in -зг-, -ск-, these groups now appear as -жд-, -шт-, e.g.

звіждати = *to whistle*, pres. *звіждим* from root звизг-.

¹ To this class also belongs formally *заспати* = *to fall asleep*, pres. *заспим*.

4. Infinitive ending joined by -a- to roots ending in -j, e.g.

бòj-а-ти се = *to fear*, root бòj-, inf. stem бòja-, pres. stem бòји-, pres. бòјѣм се = *I am afraid*.

To this group also belong the verbs
стај-а-ти = *to stand*, root стај- or стој-, inf. stem стаја-, pres. stem стòји-, pres. стòјѣм = *I stand*.
по-стòj-а-ти = *to exist*, pres. по-стòјѣм = *I exist*.

Irregularities of the Verbs other than those already mentioned

1. дати = *to give* has as present дām,¹ дāш, дā, дāмо, дāте, дāду, i.e. except in the 3rd pers. pl. it follows the verbs of Class IV; but it also has another present, viz. дāдем, дāдеш, дāде, дāдемо, дāдере, дāду, and even another one according to Class II, viz. дāднѣм. These are common colloquially.

2. знати = *to know* has a regular present according to Class IV, viz. знām (contracted from зна-j-ем), but it also has a present formed on the analogy of дāдем, viz. знāдем.

3. имати = *to have* also has an alternative (colloquial) present similarly formed, viz. имāдем, and a perfective (cf. p. 34) present имаднем.

This verb when it is negated loses its initial и- and appears in the form:

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. (jā) нēmām = <i>I have not</i> | (mā) нēmāмо = <i>we have not</i> |
| 2. (tī) нēmāш | (vī) нēmāте |
| 3. $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òн} \\ \text{òна} \\ \text{òно} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{нēmā}$ | $\left. \begin{matrix} \text{òни} \\ \text{òне} \\ \text{òна} \end{matrix} \right\} \text{нēмају}$ |

¹ This is not contracted, like the verbs of Class IV, but is an old 'irregular' verb which has become assimilated to them.

112 THE FORMATION OF THE INFINITIVE

The 3rd pers. sing. is very common as an impersonal verb for construction, cf. p. 120, e.g.

ѡма = *there is, ѡ-y-a, es gibt,*

нѡма = *there is not, ѡ n'y a pas, es gibt nicht,*

and can also be used in the future and in the past, cf. p. 120.

4. ѡѡи = *to go* forms its present from a stem ид-, viz. идѡм, идѡш, идѡ, идѡмо, идѡте, идѡ. Its past part. act., from which is formed the (compound) past, is ѡшао, ѡшла, ѡшло, pl. ѡшли, ѡпле, ѡшла.

When this verb is compounded with prepositions (and in the process becomes perfective, cf. p. 123 f.), the initial и- disappears if the prefix ends in a vowel, e.g. дѡѡи = *to come* (from до + иѡи), pres. дѡѡѡм, &c., past дѡшао, &c., but it remains if the prefix ends in a consonant, e.g. отѡѡи = *to go away* (from од + иѡи, от is the older form of this preposition), pres. отѡѡѡм, which colloquially always is cut down to ѡдѡм, &c., past отѡшао, &c. Compounded with the prefix из- this verb has two forms, viz. изѡѡи = *to go out*, pres. изѡѡѡм, &c., and изѡѡи, pres. изѡѡѡм, &c., past изѡшао and изѡшлао, &c.

5. јѡсти = *to eat* was originally an 'irregular' verb like дѡти, and had as present јѡм, јѡш, јѡ, јѡмо, јѡте, јѡду, which is still occasionally used in the southern dialect, and even appears as ѡјѡм, ѡјѡш, ѡјѡ, ѡјѡмо, ѡјѡте, ѡјѡ, but has now been generally replaced by the forms јѡдѡм, јѡдѡш, јѡдѡ, јѡдѡмо, јѡдѡте, јѡдѡ, i.e. follows Class I, 1.

6. мѡѡи = *to be able*, cf. p. 103; the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl. of this verb, besides the regular forms мѡѡѡш, мѡѡѡ, &c., appear colloquially as мѡрѡш, мѡре, мѡремо, мѡрете.

7. хтѣти (or хѡтѣти) = *to be willing, to want, to wish*, has an irregular present, viz. хѡху, хѡхем, хѡхе, хѡхемо, хѡхере, хѡхѣ; for the apocopated forms, cf. p. 73.

8. бѣти = *to be*, cf. pp. 31, 59, 73, 81, 91, but there is another verb, бѣти = *to strike, to hit*, which is conjugated exactly like пѣти, cf. p. 107, III, 1 a.

Negations and Interrogations

In the negative forms of all verbs except бѣти (cf. p. 34), хтѣти (cf. p. 74), and ѣмати (cf. p. 111) the negative particle не is put immediately before the verb, but is not joined to it, e.g.

(jā) не трѣсѣм, &c. = *I do not shake.*

(jā) не ѹчѣм, &c. = *I do not learn.*

But in the compound past and future the negative forms of бѣти and хтѣти are used, and не is not added as well.

The interrogative is formed in all cases by putting the interrogative particle ли immediately after the verb. If the personal pronoun is retained, its place is after the interrogative particle, e.g.

ѣмѣте ли (вѣ) ? = *have you ?*

трѣсете ли (вѣ) ? = *are you shaking ?*

учѣте ли (вѣ) ? = *are you learning ?*

The question can be also formed by means of the other interrogative particles, such as зѣ, дѣ ли, and also in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33, the verb *to be* = бѣти.

In sentences which begin with an interrogative word no interrogative particle is necessary, cf. p. 34, e.g.

штѣ (вѣ) учѣте ? = *what are you learning ?*

Whether is rendered by *да ли*, and must never be translated, as colloquially in English, by *if*, e.g.

Нѣ знам да ли је код куће = *I don't know whether (if) he is at home.*

CHAPTER 20

REFLEXIVE AND IMPERSONAL VERBS

In Serbian the ordinary active verbs may be transitive or intransitive. Many transitive verbs become intransitive by being made reflexive, that is, preceded or followed by *се*, which is the shortened form of the reflexive pronoun *себе*, cf. p. 55, e.g. *умивати*¹ = *to wash*, transitive, i.e. *to wash some one*, or *to wash the face or the hands*, *умивати се*¹ = *to wash*, intransitive, i.e. *to wash oneself*. In conjugation the pronoun *се* precedes or follows the verb according to whether the personal pronouns are used or not; the present of this verb would therefore be :

- Sing. 1. *ја се умивам*, or *умивам се* = *I wash (myself)*.
 2. *ти се умиваш*, or *умиваш се*
 он се }
 3. *она се* } *умива*, or *умива се*
 одно се }
- Pl. 1. *ми се умивамо*, or *умивамо се*
 2. *ви се умивате*, or *умивате се*
 они се }
 3. *оне се* } *умивају*, or *умивају се*
 она се }

¹ N.B. The perfective (cf. p. 125) form of this verb is *умити се*, which belongs to Class III, 1 *α*.

But there are certain intransitive verbs which are only reflexive, e.g. смѣјати се¹ = *to laugh*, cf. p. 107, III, 2 a, подсмѣвати се (+dat.) = *to laugh at*, дѣсити се and догòдити се = *to happen*, задòцнити се = *to be late*, рýгати се = *to mock at*, смѣшпиги се (+на +acc.) = *to smile (at)*, нáдати се = *to hope*, бòјати се (+gen.) = *to fear*, чýдити се = *to be astonished*, шáлити се = *to joke*.

Other reflexive verbs are reflexive in a mutual sense, e.g. тýћи се (pres. тýчѣм се) = *to hit each other, to fight*, тýћи = *to hit somebody*, љýбити = *to kiss*, љýбити се = *to exchange kisses*.

Finally, a transitive verb used reflexively may be the equivalent of the passive, e.g.

тò се не гòворī = *that is not said* (lit. *that itself not say = one does not say that*).

òва књīга мнòго се чītā = *this book is much read*.

òве нòвине мáло се чītају = *this newspaper is little read*.

Cf. also pp. 196, 197.

When the reflexive verbs are negated the negative particle не must, as always, immediately precede the verb, e.g. jā се не ýмīвам or не ýмīвам се = *I do not wash*, jā се не смѣјѣм or не смѣјѣм се = *I am not laughing*, ѡáци се не тýку = *the schoolboys are not fighting*.

Impersonal verbs are such as дѣсити се² and догòдити се, of which the imperfective (cf. p. 121) forms are дешáвати се and догáђати се, e.g. штā се дѣсīло (or догòдīло, cf. above) ? = *what has happened?* чѣсто се дешáва (or догáђа) = *that often happens*; чīнити се = *to seem*, чīнī ми се = (1) *it seems to me*, (2) *I fancy*.

¹ смѣјати се на нѣкого = *to smile at some one*, смѣјати се нѣкому = *to laugh at any one*.

² This is also sometimes used personally.

Expressions which in English are impersonal, e.g. *it is raining*, are rendered in Serbian as follows :

пада киша
or иде киша
or киша је

} = *it is raining* (lit. *falls rain, goes rain, rain is*).

пада снег
or снег је

} = *it is snowing* (lit. *falls snow, snow is*).

киша лије (pres. of лјити = *to pour*, like пјити) = *it is pouring* (lit. *rain pours*).

ноћас је падала киша = *last night it rained*.

јуче је падала киша цео дан = *yesterday it rained all day*.

данас ће (неће) падати киша = *it will (it will not) rain to-day*.

мраз је

or мрзнe (pres. of мрзнути) } = *it is freezing*, lit. *frost is, freezes*.

ноћас је био мраз = *last night it froze*, lit. *has been frost*.

било је мраза = *there has been a frost*, lit. *it was of frost*.

биће мраза = *it will freeze*, lit. *it will be of frost*.

ова река никад не мрзне = *this river never freezes*.

река је замрзла (past of замрзнути = *to get frozen*) = *the river has frozen over*.

грмети or грмити (ipfv., Class V, 2 or 1) = *to thunder*,¹ севати (Class IV) = *to lighten*.

On the other hand, expressions which in English are personal, e.g. *I am cold*, are in Serbian impersonal, e.g.

(х)ладно ми је = *I am cold*, lit. *cold to me is*.

топло ми је = *I am warm*, lit. *warm to me is*.

врућина ми је = *I am hot*, lit. *heat to me is*.

These expressions without the pers. pron. become impersonal, e.g.

¹ A thunderstorm is грмљавина = *thunder*; other words for storm are олуја and бура. Lightning is муња.

вру́йна је = *it is hot*, lit. *heat is*.

(*I am hungry* = гла́дан сам, and *I am thirsty* = же́дан сам, i.e. are personal in both languages.)

Other very common impersonal expressions are :

жа́о ми је = *I am sorry*, lit. *pity to me is*.

жа́о ми га је = *I am sorry for him*, lit. *pity to me of him is*.

ò, ка́ко ми је жа́о = *oh, how sorry I am*, lit. *oh, how to me is pity*.

штѣ́та је = *it is a pity* (this is followed by што = *that*).

ка́ква штѣ́та = *what a pity*.

мй́ло ми је } = *I am glad*, lit. *dear to me is*.

дра́го ми је }
бы́ло ми је вр́ло прй́јатно, штò . . . = *I was very glad that*,
lit. *to me was very pleasant that . . .*

бы́ће ми ве́дма мй́ло, прй́јатно = *I shall be very glad*.

тре́ба = *it is necessary*; this is used impersonally with the infinitive, with the dative of the personal pronoun, or followed by да = *that*; its use as a personal verb, e.g. тре́бам, is common but is considered incorrect, and is unnecessary as the verb мо́рати = *to be obliged*, мо́рām = *I must* (followed by да = *that*, e.g. мо́рām да й́дѣм = *I must go*), can always be used. Тре́ба can be used in the pres., past, or future, as follows :

то́ тре́ба одмах ура́дити (or учй́нити or свр́шити) = *it is necessary to do that at once* = *that must be done*.

то́ тре́ба дан́ас да свр́шимо = *we must do that to-day*, lit. . . . *that we do that to-day or get that done*, свр́шити, lit. = *to finish*.

шт́а вам тре́ба? = *what do you need?*

тре́ба ми (јѣдан) нòж, (јѣдна) ка́шика и (јѣдно) пѣро = *I need a knife, a spoon, and a pen*, or the adjective пòтребан = *needful* can be used : пòтребан ми је нòж, пòтребна ми је ка́шика, пòтребно ми је пѣро.

With divisible matter only трѣба is used, followed by the genitive, e.g.

трѣба ми (х)ѣртије = *I require some paper.*

пѣтребно (н.) can also be used impersonally like трѣба, e.g.

пѣтребно је да ђдѣре (cf. p. 123) у Лѣндѣн = *you must go (it is necessary for you to go) to London.*

нѣжно је = *it is necessary*, and is similarly used.

трѣба used in the past = *ought to have*, e.g. трѣбало је да ђдѣм јѣчѣ у Лѣндѣн ѡли нѣсам мѣгао = *I ought to have gone to London yesterday, but I could not*; but *I had to go to London yesterday* = мѣгао сам јѣчѣ да ѣдѣм у Лѣндѣн.

зѡ тѡ ље нам трѣбати (or трѣба ље нам зѡ тѡ) мнѡго нѡвца = *we shall need a lot of money for that.*

фѡлѣти ¹ = *to lack*, e.g. мѡло фѡлѣи па да пѡднѣм = *little is wanting but that I fall* = *I nearly fell.*

Otherwise *must* is very commonly rendered by the intransitive verb мѡрати, мѡрѡм = *I must, I have to*, мѡрао сам = *I had to*, мѡраћу = *I shall have to*, usually followed by да = *that*, мѡрамо сѣтра да ѣдѣмо (or ђдѣмо) у Лѣндѣн = *we have to go to London to-morrow*, мѡрали смо јѣчѣ тѡ да ѣрѡдѣмо = *we had to do that yesterday*, мѡраћемо сѣтра тѡ да ѣрѡдѣмо = *we shall have to do that to-morrow*; *have to* has also a literal equivalent in Serbian, viz. ѣмати да, e.g. вѣ ѣмѡте да свѣршите тѡј пѡцао дѡнѡс = *you have to (you must) finish that work to-day*, though it is not quite such a strong expression as in English.

мѡрѣти = *to care about*, e.g. нѣ мѡрѣм за вѣно = *I don't care about wine*, ђн нѣ мѡрѣи нѣ за шта = *he does not care about anything or he does not worry about anything*, but it is

¹ From the German *fehlen*, not to be confused with фѡла, from хвѡла = *thanks*.

very commonly used impersonally in the phrase нѣшта тѣ нѣ маѣри, or нѣ маѣри нѣшта = *it does not matter at all*. брѣга = *care, worry*, is used in impersonal expressions such as тѣ ми је велика брѣга = *that is a great worry to me*, also ironically брѣга ми је за тѣ = *a lot I worry about that*.

Another very common impersonal expression is вѣла (inf. вѣлати, *ipfv.*, Class IV), derived from the Italian *vaglia* = (1) *it is worth*, (2) *it is worth while, it is important, one must, one ought*, e.g.

ѡвѣј кѡнъ вѣла двѣ хѣладе дѣнарѣ = *this horse is worth*¹
2,000 *dinars* (francs), тѣ нѣшта не вѣла = *that is worthless, no good*.

вѣла да² ѡдѣте данѣс у пѡзорѣште = *you ought to go to the theatre to-day (it is worth your while)*.

не вѣла тѣ да рѣдите = *you ought not to do that (don't do that, it is not right)*.

не вѣла рѣдити нѣдељом = *it is not right to work on Sundays* (inst. sing. of нѣдеља).

It can also be used personally, e.g.

данѣс нѣшта не вѣлам = *I am no good to-day* (sc. *in health*).

Used of food this verb means *to be good*, e.g.

вѣла ли ѡвѣј сѣр ? = *is this cheese good (= in good condition) ?*
вѣла ! = *it is !* ѡве крушке не вѣлају = *these pears are not good*.

Other impersonal verbs are :

сврѣти = *to itch* (like вѣдети, cf. p. 110, V, 2), e.g. сврѣи ме ѡко = *my eye itches*.

голицати = *to tickle* (trans.), e.g. нѣшто ме голицѣ у грѣлу = *something is tickling me in my throat*.

¹ врѣди (3rd pers. sing. pres. from врѣдити) is also commonly used for *is worth*.

² The form вѣла (= вѣла + да . . .) = *perhaps*.

штѹцати се = *to hiccough*, e.g. штѹцā ми се = *I have got the hiccoughs*.

гāдити се = *to feel sick*, e.g. гāдї ми се = *I feel sick*, also figuratively гāдї ми се на њєга = *I loathe him*.

мѹка ми је also = *I feel sick* (lit. *torment to me is*). But to *be sick* (to vomit) is rendered by the transitive verb пōвраћати = *to bring back*, e.g. сїнōћ сам пōвраћао = *I was sick in the night*.

пōвраћати се = *to return*; this verb, besides being used literally in such phrases as грōзница се пōвраћа = *fever returns*, is also used in the meaning of гāдити се.

бōлети = *to ache* (like вїдети), e.g. бōлї ме глава, зѹб, стōмāк, &c. = *my head, tooth, stomach aches*.

тїпати се = *to concern*, e.g. штō се тїче мєне (gen.) = *as far as I am concerned*.

дōпадати се (ipfv.), дōпасти се (pfv.) = *to please*, cf. p. 207.
мирїсати = *to smell* (trans. + acc., also intrans.), e.g. ова рѹжа дївно мїрише = *this rose smells beautiful* (but also мїришєм рѹжу = *I smell the rose*).

знāчити = *to signify*, штā знāчи ово = *what does this mean?*
їма = *there is*, нєма = *there is not*, cf. p. 137.

When followed by a noun denoting divisible matter, їмā takes the genitive, e.g. їмā ли шєкєра? = *is there any sugar?* but if reference is made to one particular thing it takes the nominative, e.g. у овој вāроши їмā врло лєпа црквā = *in this town there is a very beautiful church*.

Нєма usually takes the gen., but cf. p. 138.

This can also be used in the future and in the past, viz. їмāкє and нєкє їмати, їмало је and нїје їмало, though in these cases the use of the verb бїти in the same sense is commoner, e.g. хōкє ли вечєрāс бїти хлєба? = *will there be bread this evening?* нєкє (бїти) = *there will not (be)*,

је ли било много света у позоришту? = *were there many people in the theatre?* било је = *there were*.

There is no exact Serbian equivalent to the English *one*, which can be rendered by the 3rd pers. sing. of a reflexive verb, e.g. *tô se не каже* (cf. p. 115) = *one does not say that*, *не може се рећи* = *one cannot tell*, *не зна се* = *one does not know*, or by such expressions as *човек* = *man*, *сваки* (or *свако*) = *every one*, *не мари сваки то да ради* = *one does not care to do that*, *човек никад не зна шта ће га снаћи* = *one never knows what is going to happen to one*.

The phrase *they say* is rendered by *кажу* or *веле*, without the personal pronoun, cf. pp. 134, 209.

Cost: *колико кошта ово?* = *how much does this cost?*

It is possible = *могуће* (je); *impossible* = *немогуће* or *није могуће*, also *можда* (= *perhaps*, contracted from *може да* and requiring a continuation, e.g. *можда је тако* = *perhaps it is so*) and *може бити* or *не може бити*.

It is probable = *вероватно* (je), *improbable* = *невероватно*.

It is forbidden = (1) *забрањено је*, (2) *није слободно*, (3) *не сме се*.

It is allowed = (1) *слободно је*, (2) *сме се*.

CHAPTER 21

THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB: THEIR MEANING, FORMATION, AND USE

IN Serbian, as in the other Slavonic languages, almost every verb exists in two forms or *aspects*, which are generally known as *imperfective* and *perfective*, and which are used according to the nature of the action expressed by the verb.

The *aspects* are varieties of the same verb which express varieties of the same action. The imperfective aspect is used

to express an action whose completion is not foreseen, which is still in progress, which usually takes some time, or which frequently recurs in the past, present, or future. The perfective aspect is used to express an action which has been completed, whose completion is definitely foreseen, though it may not actually occur, which is single or instantaneous or momentary, or which has only just begun.

Which verbs are imperfective and which perfective can only be learned by practice, but there are certain categories and characteristics of verbs which help one in recognizing the aspect.

Simple verbs, i.e. verbs not compounded with prepositions, may be of either aspect, but the majority of them are imperfective, e.g. *ї́ти* = *to go*, *ї́чити* = *to learn*, *ї́мати* = *to have*, *пї́ти* = *to drink*, *звї́ти* = *to call*, are all imperfective, i.e. they denote processes which are still going on or were, are, or will be of uncertain duration.

Examples of simple verbs which are perfective are *кї́пити* = *to buy* (a particular thing or particular things at a particular time), *рї́ти* = *to tell* (one particular thing), *бї́жити* = *to fling* (once), *стї́ти* = *to come to a stop*, *дї́ти* = *to give* (a particular thing once), and very many of the verbs of Class II, e.g. *дї́гнути* = *to lift*, *мї́гнути* = *to put* (cf. p. 106).

Simple imperfective verbs, when they are compounded with prepositional prefixes (and thereby become compound verbs), become perfective, the effect of the prefix being to define more closely, to limit or to alter the activity denoted by the verb, e.g.

обї́ти = *to go round* (a particular thing once), *наї́чити* = *to learn completely*, *пї́пити* or *ї́спити* = *to drink up, to drink completely*, *пї́звати* = *to invite* (on a particular occasion).

Needless to say, each of these verbs can also be compounded with other prepositional prefixes, each of which imparts to the verb a different meaning. There follows a list of the prepositional prefixes in alphabetical order :

до = <i>up to, until</i>	пре = <i>across</i>
за = <i>for</i>	пред = <i>before</i>
из = <i>out</i>	при = <i>to (close to)</i>
на = <i>on</i>	про = <i>past, through</i>
над = <i>over</i>	раз = <i>asunder, apart, also am-</i> <i>plifies the action of a verb</i>
о or об = <i>round</i>	с or со = (1) <i>with</i> , (2) <i>down</i> <i>from</i>
од = <i>from</i>	у = <i>in, into</i>
по = <i>generally limits the ac-</i> <i>tivity denoted by the verb</i>	уз = <i>up</i>
под = <i>under</i>	

Not every verb, of course, is used in composition with *all* of these prefixes, but the verb *йти* can be compounded with all of them except one (*пред*), when the following list is obtained (the verb itself occasionally changing in appearance in the process, cf. p. 112) :

до́йти (<i>inf.</i>), до́йдем (<i>pres.</i>), до́шао (<i>past part.</i>)	= <i>to come.</i>
за́йти, за́йдем, за́шао	} = <i>to go behind, to go deeply into</i> <i>(literally and figuratively).</i>
зай́ти, зай́дем, зай́шао	
изы́ти, изы́йдем, изы́шао	} = <i>to go out.</i>
иза́йти, иза́йдем, иза́шао	
на́йти, на́йдем, на́шао	= <i>to find.</i>
най́ти, най́дем, най́шао	= <i>to come upon, to come suddenly.</i>
нады́ти, нады́йдем, нады́шао	= <i>to come on from above.</i>
обы́ти, обы́йдем, обы́шао	= <i>to go round.</i>
оды́ти, оды́йдем, оды́шао	= <i>to go down (of water).</i>
оты́ти, оты́йдем (or о́ддем), оты́шао	= <i>to go away.</i>
по́йти, по́йдем, по́шао	= <i>to start off.</i>
поды́ти, поды́йдем, поды́шао	= <i>to come under, to approach.</i>

прѣћи, прѣђѣм, прѣшао = *to go across or over.*

прићи, приђѣм, пришао = *to approach.*

прѣћи, прѣђѣм, прѣшао = *to go past.*

разйћи се, разйђу се (3rd pers. pl.), разйшли су се (3rd pers. pl. of the past tense) = *to go apart.*

сићи, сиђѣм, сишао = *to come down from.*

йћи, йђѣм, йшао = *to come into, to go into.*

узићи, узиђѣм, узишао = *to go up on to.*

All these verbs are perfective.

It is necessary to say that very frequently these prefixes lose their original meaning in composition, and acquire secondary meanings, e.g. with the verb *стати* (cf. p. 106 ; N.B. simple verbs which are already perfective remain perfective in composition) :

застати = *to stop for a moment.*

настати = *to set in* (of the weather, seasons, times).

џстати = *to remain.*

пџстати = *to become, to grow.*

прџстати = *to cease.*

пристати = (1) *to agree*, (2) *to moor* (of a ship, intrans.).

растати се = *to part company with.*

састати се = *to meet, to come together.*

йстати (from *уз + стати*) = *to get up.*

Verbs may be compounded with more than one preposition, of course remaining perfective, e.g.

снаћи from *с + на + йћи*) = *to befall.*

произйћи (or произаћи) = *to proceed from.*

превазйћи (from *пре + уз + йћи*) = *to excel.*

еустати (from *с + у + стати*) = *to get very tired.*

Examples of verbs compounded with the prefix *пред-*, and perfective, are :

предвидети = *to foresee*.

претска́зати = *to foretell*.

предло́жити = *to propose*.

претста́вити = *to introduce, to represent*.

It often happens that *one* prefix in making the verb perfective loses some or all of its original meaning, while the other prefixes compounded with the same verb retain it; по- generally limits or defines the activity denoted by the verb without altering its meaning, e.g. ї́сти (*ipfv.*) = *to eat*, пої́сти (*pfv.*) = *to eat up something*; сла́ти (*ipfv.*) = *to send*, посла́ти (*pfv.*) = *to send (a particular thing once)*, че́кати (*ipfv.*) = *to wait*, поче́кати (or оче́кати, both *pfv.*) = *to wait a bit*; but occasionally other prefixes also *merely* make the verb perfective, and no rule can be given as regards these, e.g. пи́сати (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, напи́сати (*pfv.*) = *to write a particular thing or things, to get written*; пи́тати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to ask*, запи́тати or упи́тати (*pfv.*) = *to ask a single question*; гра́дити (*ipfv.*) = *to build*,¹ сагра́дити (*pfv.*) = *to get built, to finish building*.

When a simple imperfective verb has been made perfective by the addition of a prefix, which retains its own meaning and alters that of the verb, *and* it is necessary to use this verb in an imperfective sense, *then* imperfective verbs are formed, with the retention of the prefix and altered meaning, by lengthening or otherwise changing the stem, e.g.

зва́ти (*ipfv.*) = *to call*, по́звати (*pfv.*) = *to invite (once)*,
 по́зивати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to invite (frequently, or merely imperfectively, cf. p. 122)*.

говори́ти (*ipfv.*) = *to speak*, одговори́ти (*pfv.*) = *to answer*,
 одговара́ти (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to answer*.

¹ A building is гра́ђевина or згра́да.

б'йти (*ipfv.*) = *to hit, to beat*, убити (*pfv.*) = *to kill*, pres.

убијем, убијати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, pres. убијам) = *to kill*.

кр'йти (*ipfv.*) = *to hide* (pres. кр'їјем), покр'ити (*pfv.*) = *to cover*, покр'ивати (*ipfv.*, pres. покр'ивам) = *to cover*.

че'кати (*ipfv.*) = *to wait*, доче'кати (*pfv.*) = *to receive people, to wait till they come*, доче'к'ивати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to receive people*.

мо'ћи (*ipfv.*, cf. p. 112) = *to be able*, помо'ћи (*pfv.*, cf. p. 106) = *to help*, пома'гати (*ipfv.*) = *to help* (Class III, 2 b).

пи'сати (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, опи'сати (*pfv.*) = *to describe*, опи'с'ивати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to describe*.

ви'дети (may be either *ipfv.* or *pfv.*) = *to see*, пр'едвидети (*pfv.*) = *to foresee*, пр'едви'ђати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to foresee*.

у'чити (*ipfv.*) = *to learn*, изу'чити (*pfv.*) = *to learn thoroughly, to finish learning*, изу'ча'вати (*ipfv.*) = *to be occupied in learning thoroughly*.

Such series cannot always be formed, e.g. у'мети (*ipfv.*) = *to know how*, разу'мети (*ipfv.*) = *to understand*, подразуме'вати се (*ipfv.*) = *to be implied*, разуме'вати (*ipfv.*) and подразуме'мети are seldom used.

From other verbs again such series can be formed to almost any extent, e.g. from пи'сати (*ipfv.*) = *to write*, потпи'сати (*pfv.*), потпи'с'ивати (*ipfv.*) = *to sign*, препи'сати (*pfv.*), препи'с'ивати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to copy out*, (2) *to prescribe*, запи'сати (*pfv.*), запи'с'ивати (*ipfv.*) = *to make a note or notes*.

Such verbs as these compound imperfective verbs are usually known as *frequentative* verbs, but they are by no means always used with frequentative meaning, cf. p. 128.

It was mentioned on p. 122 that there are also simple verbs which are perfective; these usually have simple verbs corresponding to them in meaning which are imperfective,

are derived from the same root, but are of a different formation and class, e.g.

кўпѣти (*pfv.*, Class V), купѣвати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 3) = *to buy*; бѣцѣти (*pfv.*, Class V), бѣцѣвати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to throw*; дѣти (*pfv.*, Class IV), дѣвати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2a) = *to give*. To this category of verbs also belong those perfective verbs of Class II which are called *instantaneous*, e.g.

мѣнути (*pfv.*), мѣтати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *to put*.

дѣгнути (*pfv.*), дѣзати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *to lift*.

When such simple perfective verbs are compounded with a prefix they naturally remain perfective, *but* the simple imperfective verbs corresponding to them in meaning, when compounded with a prefix, *remain imperfective*, e.g.

дѣдати (*pfv.*), додѣвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to add*, (2) *to pass a thing*, e.g. *at table*.

зѣдати (*pfv.*), задѣвати (*ipfv.*) = *to give figuratively*, e.g. *trouble* (мўку), *to inflict a defeat* (ўдѣр), *a wound* (рѣну).

ѣдати (*pfv.*), издѣвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to give up*, e.g. *a criminal*, (2) *to publish*, *to edit*.

прѣдати (*pfv.*), предѣвати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to hand over*, *to transmit*, (2) *to teach*, *to lecture* (used reflexively = *to surrender*).

прѣдати (*pfv.*), придѣвати (*ipfv.*) = *to impart*.

прѣдати (*pfv.*), продѣвати (*ipfv.*) = *to sell*.

рѣдати (*pfv.*), раздѣвати (*ipfv.*) = *to distribute*.

ўдати се (*pfv.*), удѣвати се (*ipfv.*) = *to get married*, N.B. only of women,¹ ўдати or удѣвати, transitive = *to give away in marriage*.

пўстити (*pfv.*), пўштати (*ipfv.*) = *to let go*.

допўстити (*pfv.*), допўштати (*ipfv.*) = *to allow*, *to permit*.

¹ *To marry*, of men, is ожѣнити се (*pfv.*).

But frequently compound imperfective verbs of one of the other formations are preferred, e.g. одбáчити (*pfv.*) = *to fling away*, but одбáчівати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) is much commoner than одбáцати; similarly поткúпити (*pfv.*) = *to bribe*, has *ipfv.* поткупл́ивати, Class IV.

From the verbs of Class II, e.g.

пòдметнути (*pfv.*), подмèтати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to put under*, (2) *to allege*.

пòдигнути (*pfv.*, from под + дигнути), пòдизати (*ipfv.*) = (1) *to pick up*, (2) *to bring up* (e.g. a child), (3) *to erect*.

As regards verbs of this class (II, with infinitives in -нути) it is important to notice that while many of them are perfective 'instantaneous', like those just mentioned, others denote a gradual process and are imperfective, e.g. мр́знути = *to get frozen*, a perfective of which would be, e.g. прòмрзнути = *to get frozen through and through*.

There are some verbs one or both of which are never used in their simple form in either aspect, but have numerous compounds, some of which are imperfective and others perfective, e.g.

у́зєти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), у́зимати (*ipfv.*, Class IV, really a compound of їмати) = *to take*.

òтєти (*pfv.*), òтимати (*ipfv.*) = *to take away by force*.

зау́зєти (*pfv.*), зау́зимати (*ipfv.*) = *to occupy*.

дòнєти (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 105, 106), донòсити (*ipfv.*, Class V) = *to bring* (the simple verb нòсити, *ipfv.*, Class V = *to carry*).

òднєти (*pfv.*), однòсити (*ipfv.*) = *to carry away*.

пòчєти (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105), пòчи́нати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to begin* (trans. or intrans.).

објáснити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), објáшн́ивати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to explain* (јасан = *clear*).

обѣкати (*pfv.*, Class IV), обѣкати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to promise* (обѣкати = *a promise*).

ѡстати (*pfv.*, compound of стати, cf. pp. 107, 124), ѡстати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to remain*.

посѣтити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1), посѣкати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to visit, to attend (school)* (пѡсѣта = *a visit*).

пѡкушати (*pfv.*, Class IV), пѡкушати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = *to try, to attempt* (пѡкушати = *an attempt*).

прѣстати (*pfv.*), прѣстати (*ipfv.*) = *to cease*.

пѡстати (*pfv.*), пѡстати (*ipfv.*) = *to grow, to become*.

признати (*pfv.*, compound of знати, cf. p. 143), признати (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 a) = *to admit, to confess*.

сѡзнати or дѡзнати (*pfv.*), сѡзнавати or дѡзнавати (*ipfv.*) = *to find out, to discover, to learn*, sometimes with differentiation of meaning, пѡзнати (*pfv.*) = *to recognize people*, пѡзнавати (*ipfv.*) = *to know personally*.¹

Special mention must be made of the verb йти = *to go* and its compounds; as explained on p. 123 f., these latter are all *perfective*; their corresponding *imperfectives* are formed from a totally different root, viz. -лазити, e.g. дѡлазити (Class V, 1) = *to come constantly*, зѡлазити = *to set (of the sun)*, зайлазити = *to go deeply into*, йлазити or изйлазити = *to go out continuously* (cf. йзлаз = *exit*), нѡлазити = (1) *to find*, (2) *to consider*, найлазити = *to come upon often*, обйлазити = (1) *to go round often*, (2) *to visit frequently*, ѡдлазити = (1) *to go away often*, (2) *to visit often*, пѡлазити = *to start* (e.g. of the train, i.e. regularly, though this verb is also used of a single action in phrases such as кѡд пѡлазите? = *when do you start?*), ѡлаз or ѡлазак = *entrance*, &c.

лѣћи (pres. лѣгнѣм, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to lie down*, has *ipfv.* лѣжати (pres. лѣжѣм, Class V, 2) = *to lie, to be*

¹ An acquaintance is пѡзнаник (*masc.*), пѡзнаница (*fem.*).

lying, with which is connected *положити* (*pfv.*, Class V, 1); the simple *ipfv.* verb *ложити* is only used of *laying the fire* and *полагати* (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b, pres. *полажѣм*) = *to lay*, *to place*, cf. below.

сѣсти (pres. *сѣднѣм*, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to sit down*, has *ipfv.* *сѣдети* (pres. *сѣдѣм*, Class V, 2) = *to sit*.

помѡћи (pres. *помогнѣм*, Class I and II), *pfv.* = *to help*, has *ipfv.* *помѡгати* (pres. *помѡжѣм*, Class III, 2 b).

Examples of the use of the Aspects

The difference in meaning between an imperfective and a perfective infinitive has already been indicated; a few more examples follow:

можете ли доћи сѹтра? = *can you come to-morrow?* (i.e. one particular occasion); *ѡко хѡћете могу долазити свѡкога дѡна* = *if you like I can come every day* (gen. of time when); *нѣмѡм мѡстила, нѣ могу писати* = *I have no ink, I cannot write*; *можете ли му написати нѣколико рѣчѣй?* = *can you write him a few words?* (with definition of what has to be written); *полагати (ipfv.) ѣспит* = *to go in for an examination*; *положити (pfv.) ѣспит* = *to pass an examination successfully*.

As regards the present tense, the general rule is that, to describe any action which is in actual progress, or which is frequently repeated, the present of the *imperfective* verb must be used; the present of a *perfective* verb is most frequently used (1) in subordinate clauses, which may refer to actual or hypothetical facts in the past or in the future, (2) in narration, like the 'historic present' in English, to describe vividly events in the past (this includes the use in principal sentences of the presents of such instantaneous

verbs as мѣтнути, бацити); examples of the *imperfective* present are :

шта радите?—пйшѣм писма=*what are you doing?*—*I am writing letters*; ја пйшѣм мноґо писма=*I write many letters*; гдѣ кѹпујете цигарѣте?=*where do you buy cigarettes?* рѣдѣвно прймѣм српске нѣвине=*I get (receive) Serbian newspapers regularly* (прймати, *ipfv.*, Class IV); вѣз (ог влѣк) пѣлази у сѣдам сѣти=*the train starts (sc. regularly or on a particular day) at 7 o'clock*; ѡдлазите ли чѣсто у пѣзорйште?=*do you often go to the theatre?*

Examples of the *perfective* present are :

трѣба данѣс да напйшете ѡвѣ писмо=*it is necessary that you write this letter to-day* (=you must write); мѡрѣм данѣс да кѹпйм цигарѣте=*I must buy cigarettes to-day*; не мѡгу то данѣс да ѹрадйм=*I cannot do that to-day*; мѡжете ли да дѡђете сѹтра?=*can you come to-morrow?* хѡћете ли да ѡдѣмо данѣс у пѣзорйште?=*shall we go (lit. do you wish that we go . . .) to the theatre to-day?* да ли би(сте) хтѣли (cf. pp. 33, 82) да ѡдѣмо . . .?=*would you like to go?*

In all such sentences as these, although it would be possible to use the perfective infinitive, viz. напйсати, ѹрадити, кѹпити, дѡћи, отйћи, it is far more colloquial to resolve this into a subordinate clause introduced by да=*that*; this tendency is one of the chief peculiarities of Serbian syntax (cf. pp. 118, 209). Other examples are :

раѡоваћу се ѡко сѹтра дѡђѣте=*I shall be glad if you come to-morrow*; кад кѹпите књйгу пѡшљите ми је=*when you buy the book send it me*.

It must be understood that if the verb in the subordinate clause denotes an imperfective action it is of course itself

imperfective, e.g. зăр нѣ видѣте да пѣшѣм ? = *do you not see that I am writing ?*

An example of the 'historic present' :

ја ђѣм у Лондон, нађѣм свѣга пријатеља, одвѣдѣм (pres. of одвести, Class I, 1) га у пѡзорѣште, зăтѣм се вратѣм у хѡтел, ѱђѣм ѱ собу, мѣтнѣм капѣт на стѡлицу и бăцѣм се на пѡстељу мрѣав ѱмѡран = *I go off to London, find my friend, take him to the theatre, then return to (my) hotel, go into (my) room, put (my) coat on the chair, and fling myself on the bed dead tired.*

The use of the two aspects in the future and in the past corresponds closely to their use in the infinitive ; examples of the imperfective future are : пѣсаћу му = *I am going to write to him* (not specifying when or what), пѣсаћу му да дѡђѣ = *I shall write to him to come* (sc. at some time), дѡлазићу вам чѣсто = *I shall often come to (see) you* ; if such imperfective future actions are expressed by a subordinate clause, the imperfective present must be used, e.g. штă ћемо тăмо да рăдимо ? = *what are we going to do there ?*

Examples of the perfective future are : данăс ћу му написати писмо = *I shall write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; ѡко мѡгу (or мѡгнем, cf. p. 106), дѡћи ћу сѣтра = *if I can I shall come to-morrow.*

Examples of the imperfective past are : рăнијѣ сам писао мнѡго писăмă = *formerly I used to write many letters* ; кад је ѱшао ѱ собу ја сам чѣтао нѡвине = *when he came into the room I was reading a (or the) newspaper* ; јѣсте ли чѣтăли ѡвѣ књѣгу ? = *have you (ever) read this book ?* свăкога лѣта ѡдлазили смо на мѡре = *every summer* (gen. of time when) *we used to go to the seaside* ; штă сте рăдили кад је бѡмба пăла (past of пăсти, pfv., root пад-, Class I and II) = *what were you doing when the bomb fell ?*

Examples of the perfective past are : *dānās sam napísaο* десет писамā = *to-day I have written ten letters* ; *a jučē sam napísaο pětinaest* = *and yesterday I wrote fifteen* ; *jēste li prōčitāli ōvū knīgu* ? = *have you finished this book* ? *prōšlōga lēta ōtišli smo na mōre* = *last summer we went to the seaside* ; *штā сте урадили кад је бѹмба пāла* ? = *what did you do when the bomb fell* ?

The *imperative* is similarly used in *commands*, e.g. *пишите ми* = *write me* (sc. *more than once*) ; *напишите му дānās писмо* = *write him a (or the) letter to-day* ; *читāјте српске нѹвине* = *read the Serbian newspapers* ; *прочитāјте ōvū knīgu* = *read this book (and finish it)* ; *чините што гѹд хѹћете* = *do whatever you like* ; *учините or урадите тѹ дānās* = *do that to-day* ; *дѹлазите рѹдѹвно* = *come regularly* ; *дѹђите вечѹрас* = *come this evening*.

In *prohibitions* the perfective imperative is scarcely ever used ; these are expressed by either the imperfective imperative or by *nēmōj* (*sing.*), *nēmōјте* (*pl.*), followed by the imperfective infinitive or by a subordinate clause, e.g. *не пишите му or нēmōјте му писати* = *do write to him* ; *нēmōјте тѹ да рāдите* = *don't do that* ; the *pfv. imperative* is used in a few such phrases as *не забѹравите (ме)* = *don't forget (me)* ; *не забѹравите то да ўрāдите* = *don't forget to do that* (*забѹравити, pfv., Class V, 1*).

As regards the use of the two aspects in the other tenses, there is no difficulty with the *imperfect*, because this tense can only be formed from *imperfective verbs*. The *aorist* on the other hand may be formed from verbs of either aspect, though the aorist of *perfective verbs* is naturally much the commoner of the two ; the aorist of an imperfective verb denotes an action of short or limited duration in the past, e.g. *ўстаде* (3rd pers. sing. aorist of *ўстати, pfv.* = *to get*

up), чита (3rd pers. sing. aorist of читати, *ipfv.* = *to read*) мало и писа (3rd pers. sing. aorist of писати, *ipfv.* = *to write*), па онда изађе (3rd pers. sing. aorist of изаћи, *pfv.* = *to go out*) љ поље = *he got up, read a little and wrote, and then went out.*

Verbs of two Aspects.

Some verbs are regarded as being of both aspects, e.g. видети = *to see*; чути = *to hear*, e.g. видѣм га = *I see him*; ако га видѣте кажите му да дође = *if you see him tell him to come*; чујѣте ли грмљавину? = *do you hear the thunder?* кад чујѣте мој глас, уђите = *when you hear my voice, come in.* This applies also to the present and the imperative of казати = *to say, to tell*, though otherwise this is regarded as a perfective verb with the corresponding imperfective казивати (Class III, 3, cf. показати, *pfv.*, показивати, *ipfv.* = *to show*), e.g. шта кажете? = *what do you say?* не знам шта да кажем = *I don't know what to say*; како да кажем? = *how (or what) shall I say?*

The same applies to the verb велѣм, Class V, 2, which has no infinitive, and is frequently used as a synonym of кажем, e.g. шта велѣте? (more colloquial) = *шта кажете?* ако ви велѣте, ја ћу доћи = *if you say (sc. you want me to), I shall come.*

The aspects may also be divided into the following five categories:

I. IMPERFECTIVE

1. Continuous, e.g. сѣдети, Class V, 2 = *to sit (to be sitting)*; лѣтети, Class V, 2 = *to fly (to be flying)*.

2. Frequentative or iterative, e.g. сѣдати, Class IV = *to sit down frequently*; потскакивати, Class III, 3 = *to keep jumping up.*

II. PERFECTIVE

1. Momentary or instantaneous, e.g. мѣтнути, Class II = *to put*; скѣдчити, Class V, 1 = *to give a jump*.

2. Final, indicating the completion of an action, e.g. поцрнѣти, Class V, 2 = *to become black (or dark)*.

3. Inceptive, indicating the commencement of an action, e.g. по́чи, Class I, 1 = *to start*; полѣтѣти, Class V, 2 = *to fly off*; за́певати, Class IV = *to break into song*; засмѣјати се, Class III, 2 a = *to break into laughter*; заплакати, Class III, 2 b = *to burst into tears*.

CHAPTER 22

PRONOUNS DECLINED LIKE ADJECTIVES

AND THE USE OF THE PRESENT TENSE OF

TO HAVE

Sing.	овàкàв (m.), овàквā (f.), овàквō (n.)	} = <i>like this, of this kind</i>
Pl.	овàквī (m.), овàквē (f.), овàквā (n.)	
also	овàкī (m.), овàкā (f.), овàкō (n.)	
	овàкī (m.), овàкē (f.), овàкā (n.)	
тàкàв	} = <i>like that, of that kind</i>	оволīки = <i>of this size</i>
тàкī		толīки = <i>of that size</i>
онàкàв	} = <i>like that (yonder), of that kind (yonder)</i>	онолīки = <i>of that size (yonder)</i>
онàкī		

They are declined in two different ways; those ending in -и, e.g. овàкī, тàкī, are declined like the definite adjectives, cf. жўти, p. 65; the others, e.g. овàкàв, тàкàв, like the indefinite adjectives, cf. жўт, p. 64.

The *neuter singular* of all these pronouns can be used adverbially, e.g. тōлико = *so much*, just as кōлико (cf. p. 77) = *how much*.

Vocabulary

понёдељак (ог понёдељнѣк ог понёдеонѣк) = <i>Monday</i>	забран = <i>corpse</i>
уторак (ог уторнѣк) = <i>Tuesday</i>	пѣток = <i>stream, brook</i>
среда = <i>Wednesday</i>	цвѣће = <i>flowers</i>
четвртак = <i>Thursday</i>	гѣлѣб = <i>pigeon</i>
петак = <i>Friday</i>	зец = <i>hare</i> (also <i>rabbit</i>)
сѣбота = <i>Saturday</i>	рѣба = <i>fish</i>
недеља = <i>Sunday</i>	рѣк = <i>crab</i>
јануар = <i>January</i>	штѣп = <i>stick</i>
фебруар = <i>February</i>	нѣвац = <i>money</i>
март = <i>March</i>	салѣн = <i>drawing-room</i>
април = <i>April</i>	двѣрац = <i>palace</i>
мај = <i>May</i>	кафѣна = <i>inn</i> (also <i>mechana</i>)
јуни = <i>June</i>	пастрѣмка = <i>trout</i>
јули = <i>July</i>	дѣстојан = <i>worthy</i>
август = <i>August</i>	недостѣјан = <i>unworthy</i>
септѣмбар = <i>September</i>	заслужан = <i>who has deserved well of</i>
октѣбар = <i>October</i>	пѣребан = <i>necessary</i>
нѣвѣмбар = <i>November</i>	сирѣмашан = <i>poor</i>
децѣмбар = <i>December</i>	скѣпѣцен = <i>precious</i>
Бѣжић = <i>Christmas</i>	раскѣшан = <i>magnificent, luxurious</i> (also <i>spendthrift</i>)
Ускрс = <i>Easter</i> (lit. <i>Uprising</i>)	слѣбѣдан = <i>free</i> (also <i>permissible</i>)
пријатѣлство = <i>friendship</i>	дѣвѣљѣ = <i>wild</i>
пѣмѣћ = <i>help</i>	рѣѣав = <i>bad</i>
близѣна = <i>neighbourhood</i>	зеѣлен = <i>green</i>
чаc = (1) <i>hour</i> , (2) <i>moment</i> , (3) <i>lesson</i>	плѣав, плѣава = <i>blue</i> (also <i>fair-haired</i>)
пѣсао = <i>business, job, work</i>	љѣбѣчаст = <i>violet</i>
јѣзик = <i>tongue, language</i>	
сѣсед = <i>neighbour</i>	
дѣвѣѣч = <i>game</i> (sc. <i>birds</i>)	

For numerals, adverbs, and prepositions, cf. pp. 92, 189, 151.

Reading Exercise

1. Овакѣв чѣвек је дѣстојан вѣсоког пѣложѣја. 2. Овакѣ (adverbial use) рѣав чѣвек је неѣдостѣјан вѣшѣр

пријателства. 3. Оваквѣ слика је много скућпља него таквѣ. 4. Овако (adv.) добра жена заслужна је ваше помоћи. 5. И ја њмам такву књигу. 6. Њмате ли и ви такав пешир?—Немам. 7. Ко њма оваку књигу?—Моја сестра. 8. Зар ви немате овакво одело?—Немам. 9. Зар њмате онакав штап?—Њмам. 10. Њ мој сусед њма таког коња. 11. Њмамо ли толико новца колико нам је потребно?—Немамо, ѡмамо, много мање. 12. У њшем врту ѡма толико цвећа колико у вашем. 13. Ја немам толико пријатеља колико он ѡма. 14. Овај човек је толико сиромашан да нема ни одела (ог одело, cf. note). 15. Њмате ли још вина у чаши?—Њмам. 16. Његова сестра ѡма плаву хаљину, ваша зелену а моја љубичасту. 17. Сбо мога оца ѡма велике прозоре. 18. На зидовима њшега салона ѡма скупочених слика. 19. Њма ли овде каква кафана у близини?—Њма, мало даље напред. 20. Ви ѡмате оца?—Њмам. 21. Њма ли дивљачи у вашој шуми?—Нема толико колико у вашој. 22. У њшем забрану ѡма доста зечева и дивљих голубова. 23. У овоме потоку нема толико риба колико (ѡма) ракова. 24. Њма ли кога у тој сби?—Нема. 25. Зар твој отац нема више деце осим тебе?—Нема. 26. Година ѡма дванаест месеца: јануар, фебруар, март, април, мај, јуни, јули, август, септембар, октобар, новембар, децембар. 27. Месец ѡма четири недеље, недеља ѡма седам дана: понедељак, уторак (ог уторник), среда, четвртак, петак, субота и недеља. 28. Понедељником, средом и петком ѡмамо часове из енглеског језика, уторником, четвртком и суботом из француског, а недељом смо слободни. 29. Пред краљевим дворцем ѡма велики и раскошан врт. 30. Њмате ли много посла?—Њмам.

Notes

19. Имā ли=*is there any* . . .

28. понедѣљником, &c. : the days of the week used in the inst. sing. = '*on Mondays*', &c.

Note

The object in a sentence after a *negative* transitive verb is frequently put in the genitive as well as in the accusative, though the accusative *can* be used in all cases, is the most frequent, and is generally preferred, e.g. нѣмāм тѣ књѣге or нѣмāм тѣ књѣгу = *I do not possess that book*, нѣ видѣм кѹће (or кѹћу) = *I don't see the house* (also = *I don't see any house*), нѣ чујѣм глāса (or глāс) = *I don't hear the (or a) voice*; but occasionally there may be a slight difference in meaning between the two, e.g. зāшто нѣсте наѹчили лѣкцију (or лѣкције)? = *why have you not learnt (your) lesson?* зāтō штō нѣмāм књѣгу (acc. sing.) or књѣге (acc. pl.) = *because I have not (got) the book or books* (sc. *the necessary ones*), but зāтō штō нѣмāм књѣгā (gen. pl.) = *because I have no books*. But after the *impersonal* expressions нѣмā = *il n'y a pas*, нѣје имāло = *il n'y avait pas*; нѣће имати = *il n'y aura pas*, the genitive is *necessary*, e.g. нѣма (х)лѣба = *there is no bread*; нѣје имāло књѣгā = *there were no books* (cf. p. 120).

English Sentences

1. These flowers have a very nice smell; what are they called in Serbian?—Indeed, I do not know.
2. My room has four large windows.
3. In our drawing-room there are two tables, ten chairs, a piano, a Serbian carpet, and many other things.
4. Have you (got) flowers like this in your garden?
5. This poor man has no money, and his neighbour has much money.
6. I have never seen a crab so large, or such large, beautiful fishes; what kind are they?—They are called trout, and they are very tasty.
7. In our copse there are many hares, pigeons, and all sorts of game.
8. Please give me another tumbler like

this. 9. He has a Serbian lesson every day. 10. Are there any fish in that lake?—Yes, but in the neighbourhood there is a lake in which there are still bigger and better fishes. 11. My brother has fair hair and blue eyes, but my sister has dark hair and black eyes. 12. A picture of that sort is very precious. 13. A room of this size is very pleasant in summer, but very cold in winter. 14. Is there an inn (cf. p. 52) in this village? 15. He has so much work that he sleeps badly. 16. Easter next year will be on the 15th of April. 17. Christmas this year is on a Sunday. 18. The steamer goes on Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, and returns on Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. 19. This man is not worthy of your friendship, he has many debts. 20. This palace has many magnificent rooms, but has not enough windows, and its walls are not very strong.

CHAPTER 23

LIST OF USEFUL VERBS

THESE verbs are given in alphabetical order according to their *present* endings, cf. p. 103 f., together with their past participles active, from which the past tense, and their infinitives, from which the future tense, are formed.

I. Presents in -ем (-jem, -нем, -уjem), like трéсти, cf. p. 104:

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to strike, to hit ¹	бйјѐм	бйо, -ла
бóсти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to butt, to toss	бóдѐм	бó, бóла
брáти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to pluck	бѐрѐм	брáо, -ла
брйнути (се) (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to care (worry) about	брйнѐм се	брйнуо, -ла
брйсати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to wipe ²	брйшѐм	брйсао, -ла
вѐнути (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to wither	вѐнѐм	вѐнуо, -ла

¹ Cf. рáзбити (*pfv.*), рáзбйјати (*ipfv.*) = to break in pieces, to smash; óдбити = to refuse (trans.).

² *Pfv.*, обрисати.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
вѣкати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to shout ¹	вѣчѣм	вѣкао, -ла
војевати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to make war	вѡјујѣм	вѡјевао, -ла
вѣћи (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to pull ²	вѣчѣм	вѣкао, -кла
гѣнути (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to perish ³	гѣнѣм	гѣнуо, -ла
гладѡвати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to starve ⁴ (intrans.)	гладујѣм	гладовао, -ла
грѣјати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to warm ⁵ (trans. and intrans.)	грѣјѣм	грѣјао, -ла
грѣсти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to bite ⁶	грѣзѣм	грѣзао, -зла
дарѣвати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to present ⁷	дѣрујѣм	дарѣвао, -ла
дѡбити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to get ⁸	дѡбијѣм	дѡбио, -ла
зѣбсти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to be cold ⁹	зѣбѣм	зѣбао, -бла
зимѡвати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to winter	зимујѣм	зимовао, -ла
зрѣти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to ripen	зрѣм	зрѣо, ¹⁰ -ла
ѣменовати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to name	ѣменујѣм	ѣменовао, -ла
ѣскати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to require, to demand	ѣштѣм	ѣскао, -ла
кѡзати (cf. p. 134) = to say, to tell ¹¹	кѡжѣм	кѡзао, -ла
кѡзѣвати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to tell (often) ¹¹	кѡзујѣм	кѡзѣвао, -ла
кѣснути (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to get wet ¹²	кѣснѣм	кѣснуо, -ла

¹ *Pfv.* вѣкнути = to give a shout.

² Cf. обѣћи, обѣчем, обѣкао = to put on clothes, + се = to get dressed, свѣћи, &c., also скѣнути (Class II) = to take off clothes, свѣћи се = to get undressed; all these are *pfv.*

³ *Pfv.* погинути.

⁴ глад = hunger.

⁵ + се = to warm oneself.

⁶ Also ѣжсти (*pfv.*, cf. јѣсти, p. 112), ујѣдати (*ipfv.*, Class IV) = to bite.

⁷ Also поклѡнити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = to give anything as a present, пѡклѡн = a present.

⁸ *Ipfv.* дѡбѣјати, Class IV.

⁹ A cold in the head is кѣјавица (кѣјати = to sneeze), a cold in the chest is кѡшаљ (*m.*, lit. cough, cf. p. 109), to catch cold is дѡбити кѣјавицу or прозѣбсти (*pfv.*).

¹⁰ = ripe.

¹¹ Cf. покѡзати and покѡзѣвати = to show, p. 109.

¹² Cf. кѣсео = sour, кѣша = rain.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
клѣкнути (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to kneel down</i>	клѣкнѣм	клѣкнуо, -ла
красти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to steal</i> ¹	крадѣм	крадо, -ла
крѣнути ² (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to turn</i> (<i>trans.</i>), + се = <i>to start</i>	крѣнѣм	крѣнуо, -ла
куповати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to buy</i> (cf. p. 127)	кѹпујѣм	кѹповао, -ла
лѣјати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to bark</i>	лѣјѣм	лѣјао, -ла
лѣтовати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to spend the summer</i>	лѣтујѣм	лѣтовао, -ла
лйти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to pour</i> (cf. p. 107)	лйјѣм	лйо, -ла
мйловати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to caress</i>	мйлујѣм	мйловао, -ла
мйти ³ (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to wash</i> ³ (<i>trans.</i>)	мйјѣм	мйо, -ла
мрѣнути (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to freeze, to be cold</i>	мрѣнѣм	мрѣнуо, -ла
мѹсти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to milk</i>	мѹзѣм	мѹзо, -зла
навикнути се (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to get used</i> ⁴	навикнѣм се	навикнуо, -ла, ог навикао
нагнути се (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to bend</i> (<i>intrans.</i>)	нагнѣм се	нагнуо, -ла
орати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to plough</i>	орѣм	орао, -ла
пасти (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to fall</i> ⁵	паднѣм	пао, -ла
пасти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to pasture</i> (<i>cattle</i>)	пасѣм	пасо, -сла
пѣћи (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to bake, also to roast</i> ⁶	пѣѣм	пѣкао, -кла
побећи (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to run away</i>	побегнѣм	побегао, -гла
прѣсти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to spin</i>	прѣдѣм	прѣо, -ла

¹ *Pfv.* is *украти*, &c.

² *покрѣнути* (*pfv.*), *покрѣтати* (*ipfv.*, Class III, 2 b) = *покрѣт* = *movement, to move* (*trans.*), *покрѣнути се* = *to move* (*trans.*).³ Cf. note on p. 142.

⁴ *Ipfv.* *навикавати се*, Class IV; a *habit* is *навика* (*f.*), a *custom*, *обичај*, (*m.*).

⁵ *Ipfv. freq.* *падати*, Class IV.

⁶ *печено мѣсо*, *пѣцйво* or *печѣње* = *roast meat*; *to fry* is *пржити*, Class V; *pastry* = *тѣсто*.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
радовати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to rejoice</i>	радујем се	радовао, -ла
разликовати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to differ</i>	разликујем се	разликовао, -ла
расти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to grow</i> (intrans.) ¹	растем	растао, расла
ратовати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to be at war</i>	ратујем	ратовао, -ла
рећи (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to say</i> (cf. pp. 102 178) ²	рекнем	рекао, -кла
руковати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to handle, to direct</i> ³	рукујем	руковао, -ла
срести ⁴ (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to meet</i> (trans., + се, intrans.)	срѣтнем	срѣо, -ла
стигнути ⁵ (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to reach, to arrive</i>	стигнем	стигао, -гла
тећи (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to flow</i>	течем	текао, -кла
тргнути (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to pull</i>	тргнем	тргнуо, -ла
тући се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to fight</i>	тучем се	тукао, -кла
умрети (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to die</i> ⁶ (cf. p. 105)	умрем	умро, умрла
чезнути (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to long for</i> ⁷	чезнем	чезнуо, -ла

Note

The use of the verbs мити and прати is as follows: перем руке, нѳге, тело, лице, тањир, &c. = *I wash* (or *I am washing*) *hands, feet, body, face, a plate, &c.*; рубље се перѣ = *linen is washed* (or *is being washed*); жена мијѣ кѳсу = *a woman washes her hair*; умивам се (cf. p. 114) = *I wash* (intrans.), or *I am washing* (intrans.), sc. *the face*, i.e. мити, and its compounds are never used of *things*.

¹ Literally; *pfv.* порасти; *to grow* = *to become*, cf. p. 107.

² Cf. одрѣћи = *to refuse* (intrans.).

³ Used reflexively, + се = *to shake hands*.

⁴ Root срѣ-, cf. срѣћа = *fortune*, sc. *good fortune*, срѣтан or срѣћан = *fortunate*, несрѣћа = *misfortune*.

⁵ Or стѣћи.

⁶ Has *ipfv.* ўмирати, Class IV.

⁷ Cf. ишчезнути (*pfv.*), ишчезавати (*ipfv.*) = *to disappear*.

II. Presents in -ам, like имати, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бегати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to run (cf. also p. 148)	бегам	бегao, -ла
варати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to be mistaken ¹	варам се	варao, -ла
вечерати (<i>pfv.</i>) = to have supper once ²	вечерам	вечераo, -ла
гледати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to look ³	гледам	гледao, -ла
дувати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to blow	дувам	дуваo, -ла
знати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to know ⁴ (cf. p. 129)	знам	знаo, -ла
играти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to play, to dance ⁵	играм	играo, -ла
јављати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to announce, to let know ⁶	јављам	јављаo, -ла
корачати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to step ⁷	корачам	кoрачаo, -ла
кувати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to cook ⁸	кувам	куваo, -ла
купати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to bathe (trans., + се, intrans.)	купам	купаo, -ла
морати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to be obliged (cf. p. 117)	морам	мораo, -ла
надати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to hope ⁹	надам се	надаo, -ла
нападати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to attack	нападам	нападаo, -ла

¹ To make a mistake (*pfv.*) is преварити се or погрешити, Class V, 1; a mistake is погрешка. Cf. p. 203, 204.

² *Ipfv. freq.*, вечеравати, *pres.* вечеравам, Class IV.

³ изгледати = to look like, + као, or simply impersonally изгледа = it seems (so), or + да = that; the *pfv.*, to catch sight of, is угледати, cf. p. 125.

⁴ To get to know (a fact), *pfv.*, is дознати.

⁵ игра = (1) a game, (2) a dance.

⁶ For *pfv.*, cf. p. 146; + се = to appear (lit.).

⁷ корак = a step.

⁸ Kitchen = кујна, cook = кувар (m.), куварица (f.).

⁹ нада = hope (subst.).

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
осећати се ¹ (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to feel</i> (intrans.)	осећам се	осећао, -ла
певати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to sing</i>	певām	певао, -ла
плаћати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 146)	плаћām	плаћао, -ла
примати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to receive</i> (cf. p. 147)	примām	примао, -ла
пробати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to taste, to</i> <i>try</i> ²	пробām	пробао, -ла
пуцати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to shoot</i>	пуцām	пуцао, -ла
пуштати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to let go</i> (cf. p. 147)	пуштām	пуштао, -ла
ручати (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to lunch, to</i> <i>dine</i> ³	ручām	ручао, -ла
свирати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to play</i>	свирам	свирао, -ла
сећати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to remember</i>	сећām се	сећао, -ла
сијати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to shine</i>	сијам се	сијао, -ла
сликати (<i>ipfv. and pfv.</i>) = <i>to</i> <i>paint, to take a photo</i> ⁴	сликām	сликао, -ла
слушати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to listen</i>	слушām	слушао, -ла
спавати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to sleep</i> (cf. p. 110)	спавām	спавео, -ла
страдати (<i>ipfv. and pfv.</i>) = <i>to</i> <i>suffer</i>	страдām	страдао, -ла
требати (<i>ipfv. and pfv.</i>) = <i>to</i> <i>be necessary</i>	треба (cf. p. 117)	требало је
Ћжинати (<i>ipfv. and pfv.</i>) = <i>to</i> <i>take tea</i> ⁵	Ћжинām	Ћжинао, -ла
умивати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to wash</i> (cf. p. 142)	умивām се	умивео, -ла

¹ осећати is *trans.*, cf. сећати се; *to feel with one's hands* is пипати, Class IV.

² To attempt, cf. p. 129.

³ Or *to dine in the middle of the day* (ручак); the *evening meal* is always вечера, cf. p. 143; the *ipfv. freq.* is ручавати, *pres.* ручавам.

⁴ сличан = *like*, дво је слично с тим = *this is like that* (lit. *with that*).

⁵ This meal is called Ћжина.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
употребљавати (<i>ipfv.</i> ¹) = to use	употрeбљaвaм	употрeбљaвaо, -ла
хвћати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to seize (cf. p. 148)	хвћaм	хвћaо, -ла
чeкати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to wait ²	чeкaм	чeкaо, -ла
читати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to read ³	читaм	читaо, -ла
штaмпати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to print	штaмпaм	штaмпaо, -ла
шeтати се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to walk about ⁴	шeтaм се	шeтaо, -ла

III. Presents in -им like yчити, cf. p. 104 :

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
бaвити се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to sojourn	бaвим се	бaвио, -ла
бaцити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to throw (cf. pp. 127, 128)	бaцим	бaцио, -ла
бoлети (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to ache (cf. p. 120)	(бoлим)	бoлео, -ла
вoдити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to lead	вoдим	вoдио, -ла
вoлети (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to like, to love	вoлим	вoлео, -ла
врaтити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to give back ⁵	врaтим	врaтио, -ла
гoвoрити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to speak	гoвoрим	гoвoрио, -ла
гoрeти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to burn (intrans. ⁶)	гoрим	гoрeо, -ла
гpaдити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to build ⁷	гpaдим	гpaдио, -ла
гpдити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to scold	гpдим	гpдио, -ла
дpжати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to hold	дpжим	дpжaо, -ла
жeлeти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to wish ⁸	жeлим	жeлeо, -ла

¹ *Pfv.* is употребити, Class V, 1 ; + се = to be used ; use = употреба.

² *Pfvs.* are пpичекати, пoчекати, and oчекати, all = to wait a little ; сaчекати = to wait for some one (till he comes).

³ *Pfv.* прочитати, cf. p. 132 f.

⁴ Also хoдати and пpoћи се (*pres.* пpoђeм се).

⁵ + се = to return (intrans.).

⁶ To burn (trans.) is спaлити (Class V, 1) or сажeћи (Class III, 2 a ; *pres.* сажeжeм, *past* сажeгaо, сажeглa), *pfvs.* of пaлити and жeћи ; the *pfv.* of гoрeти is изгoрeти.

⁷ *Pfv.* сaгpaдити.

⁸ e.g. жeлим вам сpећaн пyт = I wish you a good journey.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
жѣвети (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to live</i> (cf. pp. 149, 208)	жѣвѣм	жѣвео, -ла
забрѣнити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to forbid</i> ¹	забрѣнѣм	забрѣнио, -ла
јавѣти (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to let know</i> ² (cf. p. 143)	јавѣм	јавѣио, -ла
кѣпити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to buy</i> (cf. p. 141)	кѣпѣм	кѣпио, -ла
лѣжати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to lie, to be lying</i> (cf. p. 129)	лѣжѣм	лѣжао, -ла
лѣтеѣти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to fly</i> (cf. p. 134 f.)	лѣтѣм	лѣтео, -ла
лѣжѣти ³ (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to lay a fire</i> (cf. p. 130)	лѣжѣм	лѣжио, -ла
лѣпити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to knock, to bang</i>	лѣпѣм	лѣпио, -ла
мѣрити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to weigh</i> (trans.), <i>to measure</i>	мѣрѣм	мѣрио, -ла
мрѣѣти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to hate</i>	мрѣѣм	мрѣео, -ла
нѣсити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to carry, to wear</i>	нѣсѣм	нѣсио, -ла
нѣжити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to spend the night</i>	нѣжѣм	нѣжио, -ла
нѣдити ⁴ (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to offer</i>	нѣдѣм	нѣдио, -ла
ѡправѣти ⁵ (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to mend, to repair; to send some one</i>	ѡправѣм	ѡправио, -ла
ѡставѣти (<i>ipfv.</i> and <i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to leave</i>	ѡставѣм	ѡставио, -ла
пѣлити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to light</i> ⁶	пѣлѣм	пѣлио, -ла
пѣмѣти (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to remember</i>	пѣмѣм	пѣмѣио, -ла
плѣтити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to pay</i> (cf. p. 144)	плѣтѣм	плѣтио, -ла

¹ Past part. pass.: забрѣѣено.

² + се = *to appear* (literally).

³ предложѣти (*pfv.*), предлагѣти (*ipfv.*) = *to propose, to suggest*.

⁴ *Pfv.* понѣдити.

⁵ Cf. ѡпѣравѣти се = *to recover from an illness*.

⁶ *Pfv.* запѣлити.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
поздравити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to greet, ¹ to salute	поздравѣм	поздравіо-, -ла
поправити (<i>pfv.</i>) ² = to correct, to improve	поправѣм	поправио, -ла
праћити ³ (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to accom- pany, to escort	праћѣм	праћіо, -ла
правити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to make	правѣм	правио, -ла
превѣдити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to trans- late ⁴ (cf. p. 123)	превѣдѣм	превѣдіо, -ла
прѣмити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to receive, to get, to accept	прѣмѣм	прѣміо, -ла
пружити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to pass, to hand	пружѣм	пружіо, -ла
пустити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to let go (cf. p. 144)	пустѣм	пустио, -ла
пушити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to smoke	пушѣм	пушио, -ла
радити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to do, to work ⁵	радѣм	радіо, -ла
свршити (<i>pfv.</i>) ⁶ = to finish (trans.)	свршѣм	свршио, -ла
сѣдети (<i>ipfv.</i>) ⁷ = to sit (cf. p. 130)	сѣдѣм	сѣдео, -ла
скочити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to give a jump	скочѣм	скочіо, -ла
слѣмити (<i>pfv.</i>) = to break (in two)	слѣмѣм (от слѣмијѣм)	слѣміо, -ла
стідети се (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to be ashamed ⁸	стідѣм се	стідео, -ла
тѣжити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to weigh (in- trans.)	тѣжѣм	тѣжіо, -ла
трѣпети (<i>ipfv.</i>) = to suffer ⁹	трѣпѣм	трѣпео, -ла

¹ A greeting is поздрав.

² *Ipfv.* поправљати, Class IV. Cf. имати право = to be right, немати право = to be wrong; correct (adj.) is тачно, cf. p. 183.

³ праћилац (cf. p. 17) = a guide.

⁴ *Pfv.* = превести, превѣдѣм, прѣвео; a translation = превод.

⁵ *Pfv.* урадити.

⁶ *Ipfv.* свршавати, Class III, 3; + се : intrans.

⁷ For *ipfv.* cf. p. 134.

⁸ Cf. p. 41.

⁹ Also патити and страдати, cf. p. 144.

<i>Infinitive</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Past Participle</i>
трòштити (<i>ipfv.</i> ¹) = <i>to spend</i> (<i>money</i>)	трòшїм	трòшио, -ла
трчати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to run</i>	трчїм	трчао, -ла
ћутати (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to be silent</i>	ћутїм	ћутао, -ла
ударити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to strike, to hit</i>	ударїм	ударіо, -ла
ухватити (<i>pfv.</i>) = <i>to seize, to</i> <i>catch</i> ²	ухватїм	ухватио, -ла
хвалити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to praise</i>	хвалїм	хвалио, -ла
чинити (<i>ipfv.</i>) = <i>to do</i> ³	чинїм	чинио, -ла

CHAPTER 24

THE PAST TENSE (PERFECT OR COMPOUND PAST)

THIS tense is formed by means of the short present forms of бїти = *to be*, and the past participle active of any verb. This participle is formed by cutting off the last two letters of the infinitive and substituting in the sing. -о for the *masc.*, -ла for the *fem.*, -лю for the *neut.*; in the pl. -ли for the *masc.*, -ле for the *fem.*, -ла for the *neut.*, e.g.

їмати : їмао (*m.*), їмала (*f.*), їмало (*n.*) } Sing.
їмали (*m.*), їмале (*f.*), їмала (*n.*) } Pl.

If the stem ends in a consonant, a is put before o for the *masculine*, e.g.

мòћи, stem мог- : мòгао (*m.*), мòгла (*f.*), мòгло (*n.*).

мòгли (*m.*), мòгле (*f.*), мòгла (*n.*).

If the stem ends in д or т, these drop before о (or л), e.g.

краєти, stem крад- : краò (*m.*), кра́ла (*f.*), кра́ло (*n.*).

кра́ли (*m.*), кра́ле (*f.*), кра́ла (*n.*).

плèсти, stem плет- : плèò (*m.*), плè́ла (*f.*), плè́ло (*n.*).

плè́ли (*m.*), плè́ле (*f.*), плè́ла (*n.*).

¹ *Pfv.* потрòшити ; *expenses* = трòшкови.

² *to catch a train* = у . . вòз ; *to catch cold*, cf. p. 140.

³ *Pfv.* учинити.

The past participle of *ѣти* = *to go* is *ѣшао, ѣшла, ѣшло* (derived from an old stem, *шед-*, prefixed with the *и-* of *ѣти*); the same with all its compounds, e.g. *дѣшао, дѣшла, дѣшло*, from *дѣти* (cf. p. 123); *расти* = *to grow* (cf. p. 102) has *растао, расла, расло* (orig. *раст+ти, рассти*); from verbs of Class V, 2, e.g. *жѣвети, вѣдети, вѣлети*, pasts are formed, and frequently used, from the present stem as well as from the inf. stem, viz. *жѣвио* or *жѣвео, вѣдио* or *вѣдео*, &c.

It has been already explained (p. 60) that this tense may correspond in meaning to the perfect, the pluperfect, the aorist, or the imperfect in English, regard of course being paid to the aspect of the verb.

Many verbs of Class II omit the syllable *-ну-* in all forms of the past except the masc. sing., cf. p. 107 and chap. 29.

In this tense, if the pronoun is retained, then the participle comes last; if it is omitted, it comes first.

The (perfect) past tense of all verbs is formed in this way.

Singular

1. *ја сѣм ѣмао (ѣмала f.)*,
or, more frequently, *ѣмао (ѣмала) сѣм = I have had*
2. *ти си ѣмао (ѣмала f.)* ,, *ѣмао (ѣмала) си = thou hast had*
3. *он је ѣмао* ,, *ѣмао је = he has had*
она је ѣмала ,, *ѣмала је = she has had*
оно је ѣмало ,, *ѣмало је = it has had*

Plural

- ми смо ѣмали (ѣмале f.)*,
or, more frequently, *ѣмали (ѣмале) смо = we have had*
- ви сте ѣмали (ѣмале f.)* ,, *ѣмали (ѣмале) сте = you have had*

ѡни су ѡмали,			} = <i>they have had</i>
	or, more frequently,	ѡмали су	
ѡне су ѡмале	,,	ѡмале су	
ѡна су ѡмала	,,	ѡмала су	

When the verb is reflexive the pronoun *се* is placed as follows (cf. also p. 207):

ја сам се вратио ог вратио сам се = *I (have) returned.*

ви сте се прѣварили ог прѣварили сте се = *you are wrong, you have made a mistake.*

The interrogative forms are :

је ли (ѡн) ѡмао ? = *has he had ?*

јесте ли ви ѡмали (ѡмале, f.) ? = *have you had ?*

Or :

да ли је (ѡна) ѡмала ? = *has she had ?*

да ли су (ѡни) ѡмали ? = *have they had ?*

Or with *зап*, cf. p. 33 :

зап сте (ви) ѡмали (ѡмале) ? = *have you really had ?*

зап су (ѡне) ѡмале ? ! = *have they (f.) really had ?*

Or in the form of an assumption, cf. p. 33.

The negative forms are :

(ја) нисам ѡмао (ѡмала f.) = *I have not had.*

(ви) нисте ѡмали (ѡмале f.) = *you have not had.*

The negative-interrogative forms :

нисмо ли (ми) ѡмали (ѡмале f.) ? = *have we not had ?*

нису ли (ѡни) ѡмали ? = *have they not had ?*

Or more emphatic forms with *зап*, e.g.

зап нисте (ви) ѡмали (ѡмале f.) = *haven't you really had ?*

зап нису (ѡне) ѡмале ? ! = *haven't they (f.) really had ?*

With interrogative pronouns and adverbs, *колико*, *где*, *кад*, &c., the interrogative particles are omitted, cf. p. 34.

CHAPTER 25

THE PREPOSITIONS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

THE prepositions are both simple and compound ; the first govern one, two, or three cases, the second only the genitive.

I. The following are the simple prepositions which govern only one case, e.g.

1. The genitive :

бѣз = <i>without</i>	ѡд = (<i>away</i>) <i>from</i> , <i>since</i> (often merely = <i>of</i>)
близу ¹ = <i>near</i>	ѡко = (1) <i>round</i> , ⁴ (2) <i>about</i> (= <i>approximately</i>)
вѡн = <i>outside</i>	ѡсим = <i>except</i> , <i>besides</i>
вѡше ² = <i>above</i> (= <i>beyond</i>)	пѡред = <i>beside</i> , <i>alongside</i>
врѡх = <i>above</i> (= <i>over</i>)	пѡслѣ ¹ = <i>after</i>
дѡ = (1) <i>as far as</i> , <i>until</i> , (2) <i>close to</i> , (3) <i>before</i>	прѣ ¹ = <i>before</i>
дѡж = <i>alongside</i>	прѣко = <i>over</i> , <i>across</i>
збѡг = <i>on account of</i>	прѡтѣв = <i>against</i>
из = <i>out of</i> , <i>from</i>	рѡди = <i>for the sake of</i>
кѡд = <i>at</i> (<i>the house of</i>), <i>with</i> , <i>by</i> (<i>near</i>)	рѡзма = <i>besides</i> , <i>except</i>
крѡј ³ = <i>alongside</i>	сѣм = ѡсим
мѣсто = <i>instead of</i>	спрѡм = <i>in front of</i>
ниже ² = <i>below</i>	срѣд = <i>in the middle of</i>
	сѡпрѡт = <i>opposite</i>

2. The dative : к (or ка) = *towards*, *to*.¹ Can also be used adverbially.² Are also comparative adjectives and adverbs.³ As a *subst.* = (1) *the edge*, (2) *the end*.⁴ *Round* (*adj.*) = *окръжао*.

3. The accusative :

чрòз = (1) *through*, (2) *in* (of нїз = *down* time)

мїмо = *past, in spite of* ўз = *up* (*near, at*)

4. The locative :

прї = *by, near*.

прєма = *towards, opposite, in contrast to*.

II. The following prepositions govern two cases :

1. The gen. or inst. :

с or са (+ gen.) = (1) *from off*, (2) *because of*, (+ inst.) = *with*.

2. The acc. or inst. :

мєђу (+ acc.) = *between* (motion towards); (+ inst.) = *between* (rest at), *amongst*.

над (+ acc.) = *above or over* (motion towards); (+ inst.) = *above or over* (rest at).

пòд (+ acc.) = *under* (motion towards); (+ inst.) = *under* (rest at).

прєд (+ acc.) = *in front of, before* (motion towards); (+ inst.) = *in front of* (rest at).

3. The acc. or loc. :

на (+ acc.) = (1) *on to*, (2) *for* (of time); (+ loc.) = *on*, also *at*.

ò (+ acc.) = *on, against*; (+ loc.) = *about, concerning*.

пò (+ acc.) = *for* (to fetch), *for* (of time), *at the rate of*; (+ loc.) = *about, over, after, according to*.

III. The following prepositions govern three cases :

1. The gen., acc., or inst. :

зà (+ gen.) = *in the time of*; (+ acc.) = *for* (also *in, at, behind, by*, cf. p. 160); (+ inst.) = *behind* (following after).

2. The gen., acc., or loc. :

ѣ (+ gen.) = *in the possession of* ; (+ acc.) = *into, at* (of time of day) ; (+ loc.) = *in*.

The following compound prepositions govern only the genitive :

ѣза = <i>behind, from behind</i>	насреѣд = <i>in the middle, into</i>
ѣзан ¹ = <i>outside</i>	<i>the middle of</i>
ѣмеѣу = <i>between, amongst,</i>	поврѣх = <i>over</i>
<i>from amongst</i>	пѣкрај = <i>alongside</i>
ѣнад = <i>over, above</i>	пѣпѣт = <i>towards</i>
ѣспод = <i>under, from under</i>	посреѣд = <i>насреѣд</i>
ѣспреѣд = <i>from before</i>	снѣже ² = <i>from below</i>
кросреѣд = <i>right through</i>	спѣреѣд = <i>beside</i>
наврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>	уврѣх = <i>on the top of</i>
накрај = <i>on or at or on to or</i>	ѣкрај = <i>пѣкрај</i>
<i>to the end</i>	умѣсто = <i>instead of</i>
наоколо ² = <i>all round</i>	ѣнаоколо ² = <i>наоколо</i>
	усреѣд = <i>in the very middle of</i>

Examples (N.B. the prepositions often lose the accent when not emphasized, cf. also p. 22) :

With the Genitive

I, 1. без нѣвца = *without money* ; без мѣне = (1) *without me*, (2) *in my absence* ³ ; без ѣчега = *without anything* ; бѣз обѣира на . . . = *without regard to . . .*

блѣзу вѣроши = *near the town* ; блѣзу мѣра = *near the sea* ; as comp. блѣже мѣне = *nearer (to) me* ; as superl., usually + dat. : наѣближе мѣни = *nearest (to) me*.

ван кѣхе = *outside the house* ; ван сеѣбе = *beside oneself* ;

¹ Cf. изванреѣдан = *extraordinary*.

² Can also be used adverbially.

³ Absence = ѣсуство, на ѣсуству = *on leave, on holiday*.

стањујем ван вàроши = *I live out of town* ; (x)àјдемо ван вàроши = *let us go out of town*.

вйше : нàша кyђа је вйше вàше = *our house is above (behind) yours*.

врх : вòда је врх мène = *the water is just over my head*.

дò : (1) òстаните до краја òвога мèsеца = *stay till the end of this month* ; йдите до краја òве yлице = *go to the end of this street* ; (2) сèдите до мène = *sit close to me* ; òн стањује до нàс = *he lives next to us* ; (3) дòђите до краја òве нèдeље = *come before the end of this week*.

дyж рèке = *along the river*.

збòг тога = *on account of that* ; збòг ньèга = (1) *because of him, on account of him*, (2) *for his sake* ; збòг пòсла = *on account of work*.

йз : (x)àјдемо йз кyће = *let us go out of the house* ; дòбио сам пйсемо из Србије = *I have got a letter from Serbia* ; порèклом из Дàлмàције = *(he is) by origin from Dalmatia* ; yзèли су се из лyбави = *they married (lit. they took each other) from love*.

кòд нàс = *'chez nous,' at our house, in our country* ; кòд кyће = *at home*.

крај пyта = *alongside the road*.

место мène = *instead of me*.

нйже : вàша кyђа је нйже нàше = *your house is below ours*.

òд : дòбио сам пйсемо од ньèга = *I have got a letter from him* ; йдите од мène = *go away from me* ; од прилике (or as one word, отприлике) = *approximately* ; yмро је од рàне = *he died from a wound* ; од рàдости = *from joy* ; од тyге = *from sorrow* ; од Београда до Нйша = *from Belgrade to Nish* ; бвде сам од почётка òве гòдине = *I have been (lit. I am) here since the beginning of this year* ; дèвòјка од осàмнàест гòдинà = *a girl of 18* ; квàка од врàта = *the handle of the*

door ; ха̀лина од сви́ле = *a dress of silk* ; од че́га је дво́ ? = *what is this made of ?* ; ми́рис од ру́жа = (1) *rose-scent*, (2) *the smell of roses* ; два́ј шешѝр је бо́љи од то́га = *this hat is better than that* (cf. p. 88) ; је́дан од ва́с = *one of you* ; то́ ни́је ле́по од ва́с = *that is not nice of you* ; је́дан од двѝх љу́ди = *one of these men*.

о́ко ку́ће је врт = *round the house is a garden* ; о́ко ру́чка = *about lunch-time* ; о́ко трѝ́¹ са́та = *about three o'clock* ; има́ о́ко два́десет го́ди́на = *he (or she) is (lit. has) about 20 (years old)*.

о́сим ме́не ни́кога ни́је би́ло = *there was nobody (there) except me* ; о́сим (or сем) то́га = *besides that*.

по́ред шу́ме те́че ре́ка = *beside the forest flows a river* ; по́ред то́га = о́сим то́га ; ста́ните по́ред ме́не = *stand next me*.

по́сле ве́чере = *after supper* ; по́сле две́¹ го́дине = *after two years* ; по́сле не́колико да́на = *after several days* ; по́сле све́га што је би́ло = *after all* ² *that has happened*. (N.B. по́слепо́дне = *the afternoon* can also be used = 'in the afternoon' and as *this afternoon* : дво́ по́слепо́дне.)

пре́¹ две́ го́дине (два́ да́на, не́колико не́деља, ме́сеци) = *two years (two days, several weeks, months) ago* (lit. *before . . .*) ; пре то́га = *before that* ; до́шао је пре́ ње́ = *he came before her* (sc. *before she did*) ; пре све́га = *above all*. (N.B. пре́ подне = *the forenoon* can also be used = 'in the morning' and as *this morning* : дво́ пре́по́дне.)

пре́ко по́ља = *through (across) the field* ; пре́ко бр̀да (пла́ни́не) = *over (across) the hill (mountain)*, sc. either *motion across* or *position beyond* ; прѝђи́мо пре́ко ре́ке = *let us go across the river* (sc. either by boat or across a bridge) ;

¹ Cf. p. 93.

² 'After all' = *and yet* must be rendered by the conjunction *ипак*.

преко моста (or ћуприје) = *across the bridge*; преко пута, *across the road, over the way, opposite*; била сам у Србији преко (or више од) две године¹ (два месеца) = *I (fem.) was in Serbia more than two years (two months)*, N.B. *I have been in Serbia* would be ја сам у Србији већ (already) две године (годину дана = *one year*¹), or има две године како сам у Србији; има две године како сам била (or нисам била) у Србији = *it is two years since I was in Serbia*.

против: он ради против мене = *he is working against me*; имате ли штѡ (or штѡгод) против тога = *have you anything against that (= any objection)*.

ради Бѡга = *for God's sake*; тога ради = *on account of that*.

разма = *ѡсим is seldom used*.

среѡ = *пѡсред*, cf. p. 153.

супрот наше куће = *opposite our house*.

With the Dative

I, 2. к: дођите к мени = *come to me*; ѡтишао је ка реци = *he has gone towards the river*; ѡво је пут ка Скупљу = *this is the road to Skoplje*.

With the Accusative

I, 3. кроз вáрош (село, шѡму, Србију) = *through the town (village, forest, Serbia)*; кроз месец дана¹ = *in a month's time*.

мимо куће = *past the house*; мимо вáше вѡље = *contrary to your wishes* (вѡља f., lit. = *will*); мимо нáшег очекивáња = *contrary to our expectation*.

низ реку (брдо) = *down stream (hill)*; сѡзе су јој текле

¹ But N.B. више од годину (acc.) дана (gen. pl.) = *more than a year (of days)*; this is a very common Serbian colloquialism); више од месец (or недељу) дана = *more than a month (or week)*.

низ лице = *tears were streaming down her face* ; низ длаку = *with the grain*, lit. and fig.

уз реку (брдо) = *up stream (hill)* ; уз длаку = *against the grain*, lit. and fig. ; ста̀ни уз мене (or ўзѧ ме) = *stand close to me* ; он то ради мени уз прѣкос (or у прѣкос) = *he is doing that to spite me* ; шта пѣјете уз јело ? = *what do you drink at meals ?* ра̀ме уз ра̀ме = *shoulder to shoulder* ; бѣрити се уз некога = *to fight on behalf of (and with) anybody* ; ўз то = *in addition to that*.

With the Locative

I, 4. при брѣгу = *at the foot of the hill* ; при вѣчери (ру́чку, до́ручку) = *at supper (lunch, breakfast)* ; при сто́лу = *at table (eating)* ; не́мам но́вца при се́би = *I have no money on me* ; при свѣм(у) то́м(е) = *in spite of all that*.

пре́ма : он се́ди пре́ма мени = *he is sitting opposite me* ; и́дите пра́во пре́ма онѡј ку́ћи = *go straight towards that house* ; пре́ма то́ме = *according to that or in contrast to that*.

With the Genitive and Instrumental

II, 1. с or сѧ, (1) + gen. : до́шао је с пѣја́це (с ва́шара) = *he has come from the market (the fair)* ; сѣшли су с брѣ́да (пѣла́нине) = *they have come down from the hill (mountain)* ; с ђве (ђне) стра́не = *from this (that) side* ; с јѣдне (дрѣ́ге) стра́не = (1) *on one (the other) side*, (2) *on the one (the other) hand* ; с дра́ге во́ље = *with great pleasure* ; с де́сне (ле́ве) ру́ке = *on the right (left) hand* ; с то́га = *from (= for) that*, sc. *reason*¹ ; —, (2) + inst. : сѧ мно́м = *with me* ; с ва́ма = *with you* ; са за́дово́љством = *with pleasure* ; с ту́гом = *with sorrow* ; с пра́вом = *with right* ; с ко́јом се оже́нио ? = *whom did he marry ?* с јѣднѡм Ёнгле́скињом =

¹ A (or the) reason is разлог or ўзрок.

an *Englishwoman* ; шта ћете (sc. радити) стѣм ? = *what are you going to do with that* ? N.B. When the instrument is denoted instrumental case by itself is used, e.g. ја пишем пером а ви оловком = *I am writing with a pen and you with a pencil* ; с четири пријатеља = *with five friends* (N.B. numerals in such cases are not declined, cf. p. 93).

With the Accusative and Instrumental

II, 2. међу, (1) + acc. : мајка оде међу децу = *the mother went amongst the children* ; мет(н)и ову књигу међу оне = *put this book amongst those* ; ———, (2) + inst. : он је најбољи међу вама = *he is the best amongst you (= of you)* ; живела сам годину и по (данā) међу Србима = *I (f.) lived a year and a half amongst the Serbs*.

над, (1) + acc. : наднесите се над умиваџник = *bend over the basin* ; ———, (2) + inst. : над нама је (а)ероплан = *there is an aeroplane over us* ; над њим (ог од њега, cf. p. 89) нема бџег човека = *there is no man better than he* ; ко стањује над вама (ог више вас) ? = *who lives over you* ?

под, (1) + acc. : мет(н)ите ми јастук под главу = *put a pillow¹ under my head* ; узети кућу под кѣрију² = *to take a house on (lit. under) a lease* ; под старџст = *in one's old age* ; ———, (2) + inst. : под њим је добар коњ = *there is a good horse under him* ; под влаџом овога краља = *under the rule of this king* ; под чијим љменом = *under whose name* ; под заштџтом, под влашћу + gen. = *under the protection, the power of . . .*

пред, (1) + acc. : спустите цѣпеле пред врата = *put the shoes in front of the door* ; он глѣда предā се = *he is looking in front of himself* ; дођите пред вече = *come just before*

¹ Also = *cushion*.

² најмити (Class V, 1, *ipfv.*) = *to hire anything or any one* ; даџи под кѣрију ог у најам = *to let (on hire)*.

evening (towards); пред рѹчак = *just before lunch*; мѣт(н)ите тѡ пред мѣне (or прѣдѣ ме) = *put it in front of me*; —, (2) + inst.: прѣда мною нѣма ништа = *there is nothing in front of me*; нѣко стоји прѣд кућом = *some one is standing in front of the house*.

With the Accusative and Locative

II, 3. нѣ, (1) + acc.: мѣт(н)ите тѡ на сто = *put it on the table*; одговѡрићу на његово писмо = *I shall answer your letter*; нѣ здравље! = *to your health!* тѡ је на ващу штѣту (кѡрѣст) = *that is to your disadvantage (advantage)*; дајѣм вам ђво на поклѡн¹ = *I give you this as a present*; дѡћи ћу на недељу данѡ = *I shall come for a week*; нѣ лето, нѣ зѣму = *for the coming summer, winter*; нѣ тѡј начин = (1) *in that manner*, (2) *in that event*; изѡћи нѣкоме на сѹсрет = (1) *to go to meet any one*; на брзу рѹку = *quickly*; пѹтујѣмо на Ниш за Београд = *we are travelling to Belgrade via Nish*; (2) *to help*; —, (2) + loc.: књѣге су на столу = *the books are on the table*; на кѣши = *in the rain*; хвала вам на томе = *thank you for that*; на крају крајѣвѡ = *at long last* (lit. *at end of ends*); њѣхова кућа је на крају вѡроши = *their house is at the end of the town*; Београд је на Дунаву и на Сѡви = *Belgrade is on the Danube and on the Save*; кѡко се кѡже на српскѡм, cf. p. 42.

ѡ, (1) + acc.: ѡбесите² кѡпѹт о чивѣлук = *hang your coat on the peg (or hook)*; —, (2) + loc.: о чѣму говѡрите? = *what are you speaking about?* питаћу га о томе = *I will ask him about that*.

пѡ, (1) + acc.: пѡшто су јѡја? — по дѣсет пѡрѡ = *how much are the eggs?* — 10 paras each; дѡшао сам пѡ вѡс = *I have*

¹ поклѡнити (pfv., Class V, 1) = *to present, to make a present of*.

² Ipfv. is вѣшати, Class IV; *to hang*, intrans., is вѣсити, Class V, 1.

called for you ; ѿмам по́сла по цѣо дѣн = *I have work for the whole day* ; —, (2) + loc. : разо́шли су се по ва́роши = *they dispersed all over the town* ; ви́ди се по њѣму да је бѣлѣстан = *one can see by his looks that he is ill* ; по за́кону = *according to the law* ; по мо́ме мѣшлѣњу = *in my opinion* ; по рѣду = *one after the other, in turn* ; по пра́вилу = *by rule* ; по свѣј прѣлици = *in all probability*.

With the Genitive, Accusative, and Instrumental

III, 1. за, (1) + gen. : за влѣде ца́ра Ду́шана = *in the reign of tsar Dushan* ; —, (2) + acc. : се́д(н)ите за стѡ = *sit down to table* ; сѣ́нце је за́шло за́ брдо = *the sun has gone behind the hill* ; ѿма ли за ме́не пи́сѣма ? = *are there any letters for me* ? др́жите ме за́ рѣку = *hold me by the hand* ; би́ћу го́тов за не́дељу да́на = *I shall be ready¹ in a week's time* ; за вре́ме дво́га лѣ́та = *in the course of or during this summer* (lit. *for the time of*) ; ја́ ћу пла́тити за́ вас = *I shall pay for you* ; зна́те ли ви́ за́ то ? = *do you know of that* ? чу́о сам за њѣга = *I have heard about (of) him* ; дво́у љзѣ́ти (чу́вати) за се́бе = *I shall take (keep²) this for myself* ; ја́ вас смѣ́трам за при́јатеља = *I look on you as a friend* ; је́ ли дво́ пу́т за Београ́д ? = *is this the road to (for) Belgrade* ? (cf. p. 156) ; за ко́га ће се љда́ти ? = *whom is she going to marry* ? (cf. p. 157) ; за је́дног Срби́на = *a Serbian* ; —, (3) + inst. : ѡни су ве́ћ за стѡ́лом = *they are already at table* ; не́ко љде за́ нама = *some one is following us* ; за́ кѣм је (sc. љда́та ? = *to whom* (lit. *behind*) *is she* (sc. *married*) ? за је́дним Ѣнгле́зом = *to an Englishman*.

III, 2. љ, (1) + gen. : у ко́га (more usually код ко́га)

¹ Another word for *ready* is *спрѣман*.

² To *keep doing anything*, &c., must be rendered by the adverbs *непрѣстано* or *ста́лно* (= *ceaselessly*) and a verb ; to *keep* (to *hold*, to *maintain*) + др́жати (Class V, 2), cf. p. 145.

сте тражили по̀моћ ? = *from whom did you ask help?* (lit. seek) ; —, (2) + acc. : (х)а̀јдемо у ва̀рош = *let us go into the town* ; (х)а̀јдемо у мо̀ју со̀бу = *let us go into my room* ; у о̀но до̀ба¹ = *at that time* ; у̀ лето, у̀ зѣму, у̀ јесен, у̀ пролеће = *in the summer, winter, autumn, spring* ; у нѐдељу = *on Sunday* ; у по̀недеоник = *on Monday, &c., cf. p. 136* ; на̀ша дѐца и́ду у̀ школу = (1) *our children go to school*, (2) . . . *are on their way to school* ; у̀ ко̀рак = *at walking pace* ; ку̀да пу̀тујете ? — у (or за) Со̀лу̀н, у (or за) Ср̀бију = *where are you travelling to?* — *To Salonica, to Serbia* ; —, (3) + loc. : где́ жи́вите ? — у Ду̀брѡвнику = *where do you live?* — *At Ragusa* ; у ко̀јој у̀лици ста̀нујете ? — у Макѐдонској = *in which street do you live?* — *In Macedonia Street* ; има ли ку̀патило у о̀во̀м хо̀телу ? = *is there a bathroom in this hotel?* у ко̀ме је ве́ку то́ би́ло ? = *in which century was that?* у о̀ста̀лом = *for the rest, for that matter* ; у мо̀м прѣсу̀ству (neut.) = *in my presence*.

Of the compound prepositions *иза*, *између*, and *испод* are especially common, e.g.

иза ку̀ће је извор = *behind the house is a spring (of water)* ; на̀ше има́ње је иза сѐла = *our property is beyond (behind) the village*.

изме́ђу Бео̀града и Ни́ша има́ мно́го ста̀ни́ца = *there are many stations between Belgrade and Nish* ; изме́ђу на́с ни́је би́ло ни́чега = *there was nothing between us* ; се́дели смо изме́ђу про́зѡра и врѡта = *we were sitting between the window and the door*.

испод ру́ке = *under (one's) arm (also = privately)* ; испод сва́ке це́не = *below any price, sc. worthless*.

¹ Cf. p. 37.

Vocabulary

универзитѣт = *university*
 виногра́д = *vineyard*
 штампари́ја = *printing-press*
 клави́р = *piano*
 ру́бље = *linen (= clothes)*.
 пу́шка = *rifle*
 те́нис = *tennis*
 неприя́тељ = *enemy*
 нѡ́кат = *nail (of hand or foot)*,
 claw
 ро́г = *horn*
 лива́да = *meadow*
 ру́жа = *rose*
 плу́г = *plough*
 маши́на = (1) *machine*, (2)
 machines
 до́писница = *post-card*
 ро́веда = *horned cattle*
 о́вца = *sheep*
 кра́ва = *cow*
 ма́че = *kitten*
 ле́птир = *butterfly*
 ру́чак = *lunch*
 ра́чу́н = *bill*
 пре́дмет = *object, subject*¹
 ве́тар = *wind*

на́дзор = *supervision*
 ўспомена = *souvenir, recollection*
 преда́вање = *lecture*
 књи́же́вност = *literature*
 бро́ј = *number*
 брѣ́га = *worry*
 ора́ње = *ploughing*
 гро́зница = *fever*
 стра́на = *side*
 теле́грам от де́пеша = *tele-*
 gram
 ўмо́ран = *tired*
 ди́ван = *beautiful, lovely*
 до́во́љан = *sufficient*
 хла́дан = *cold*
 ўжа́сан = *terrible, awful*
 ўре́дан = *tidy*
 држа́вни = *belonging to the state*
 ре́дѡван = *regular*
 це́о, це́ла = *whole*
 стра́шан = *horrible*
 мла́д, мла́да = *young*
 тврѣ́д, тврѣ́да = *hard*
 де́сны = *right-hand (adj.)*
 ле́ви = *left-hand (adj.)*
 по́ла, *num.* = *half*

Reading Exercise

The verbs of the second group, cf. p. 143.

1. Вече́рас мо́рам да и́дѣм у Беѡгра́д. 2. Сви́рате ли на клави́ру?—Сви́рам, а́ли не́ добро. 3. И́igrate ли те́нис?—Не́ (и́грам). 4. Поне́кад ў́вече чи́тамо до де́сѣт са́ти. 5. Шта́ то́ гле́дате́?—Гле́дам ѡно́ ку́че ка́ко се и́гра са ма́четѡм. 6. Мо́ј ѡта́ц спа́ва в́рло рѣ́аво. 7.

¹ The subject of a state is по́дѡник.

Зна́те ли гдѣ́ је хо́тел X?—У прво́ј у́лицы с де́сне стра́не.
 8. Ми́ (се) шѣ́тамо ра́но љу́тру дѣ́ж пу́та по́ред на́шег виногра́да. 9. Ми́ ни́када не ру́чавамо́ прѣ́ двана́ест са́ти. 10. Ка́д ве́чѣра́вате?—Ў́ осам са́ти. 11. Ве́ћ по́ла са́та ва́с че́кам шѣ́тају́ћи¹ го́ре до́ле. 12. Ка́ква преда́вања́ слу́шате на уни́верзитѣ́ту?—Из англи́ске књи́жевно́сти. 13. Иза́ на́ше ку́ће је (ог ња́) ве́лика шу́ма у ко́јој ти́це пе́вају по цѣ́о да́н. 14. Насре́д по́ла ду́ва стра́шан ве́тар. 15. Ка́д смо ўпо́љу ми́ са́ми ку́вамо ру́чак. 16. Сли́ка ли ва́ша се́стра?—Она́ не, а́ли мо́ј мла́ђи бра́т сли́ка. 17. Ову́ ру́жу не мо́гу ва́м да́ти (ог . . . да́ вам да́м), о́во је ўспо́мена од мо́га при́јате́ља. 18. Ўжи́на́те ли ре́дѣ́вно?—Поне́кад не́. 19. Гдѣ́ се шу́тапа́ ва́ша књи́га?—У др́жавно́ј шу́тапа́рији. 20. Ма́јке но́ћу покрыва́ју сво́ју де́цу. 21. Гдѣ́ је ва́ша се́стра?—Хва́та ле́птире́ у врту́. 22. Два́ чо́века ко́рачају́ та́мо-а́мо испре́д на́ше ку́ће. 23. При́imate ли ка́кве но́вине?—При́мамо трѣ́је (cf. pp. 30, 95) (ог три́ брѣ́ја). 24. Мо́ј бра́т ни́шта ми не јавља́ гдѣ́ је са́да. 25. Њѣ́гов бра́т не пла́ћа ўре́дно сво́је рачу́не. 26. Не пу́штајте де́цу ни́када без сво́га на́дзора. 27. Војни́цы пу́цају из пу́шакá. 28. Не́пријате́љ бе́га из се́ла и ва́роши. 29. Стра́шно је уби́јати љу́де. 30. Не́ тре́ба бе́гати љспре́д не́пријате́ља, не́го пу́цати на њѣ́га и на́падати га. 31. Дана́с не мо́гу ни ру́чати ни ве́черати, је́р се не о́сећа́м до́бро.

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

32. Во́лови бо́дѣ́ ро́говима. 33. Ма́чка гра́бе но́ктима. 34. Са́мо рѣ́ави љу́ди кра́ду. 35. Хо́ћете ли да и́демо ве́чѣра́с на бре́г (ог брѣ́до)?—Не мо́гу, љма́м мно́го по́сла. 36. На о́номе бре́гу ра́сте ди́вно цве́ће. 37. Ка́д ўмре́мо

¹ Present indeclinable participle, 'walking,' cf. p. 194.

брига немамо. 38. Ћмете ли да плетете чарапе?—Не ѱмѣм, али моје сестре ѱмеју. 39. Да ли ваши ѱченици довољно разѱмеју енглѣски?—Прилично. 40. Смѣте ли да пуцаѣте из пушке?—Смѣм, зашто не ! 41. Наши сељаѣи не ору више плѱгом и воловима, него машинѱм за орање. 42. Прѣду ли ваше сељанке?—Не. Код нас, у Србији, прѣду и сељанке и маѣке. 43. Зашто зебеш напољу, зар ти није хладно?—Није. 44. Хођу да седнем, ѱжасно сам ѱморан. 45. Чѣсто пуѣта војници саами пѣру своје рѱбље. 46. Не треба грѣсти зубима тврде предмете. 47. Не ѱмѣм да музем краве, али ѱмѣм помало овце. 48. Тресѣ се као да је у грѱзници. 49. Говѣда и овце пасу по зеленѱј ливади.

Notes

15. ми саами=here *we ourselves*, but can also=*we alone*.
 17. даѣти, cf. p. 111.
 42. прѣсти, stem пред-, Class I, 1.
 жѣна прѣде вѱну=*a woman is spinning the wool*.
 маѣка прѣде=*the cat purrs*.
 44. сѣсти, stem сед-, the present tense сѣднем, cf. p. 106.

English Sentences

1. We receive every day an English newspaper and a Serbian newspaper. 2. Do you read much?—I read two hours every evening. 3. Oxen and cows butt with their horns. 4. Why are you beating this unfortunate horse? 5. Some one is shouting for help. 6. Flowers wither very quickly when they have no water. 7. These poor children are very tired and are starving; their parents have no money. 8. Do you wash with hot or cold water? 9. What do you drink at meals? 10. Do you understand what I say? 11. Do you know how to milk cows? 12. I am cold. 13. This river flows very rapidly. 14. When you speak slowly I understand everything. 15. Whither does this road lead? 16. We lunch at 1 o'clock, have tea at half-past 4, and sup at 8. 17. You are mistaken,

this is not the road for Salonika. 18. What are these men building?—They are building a new railway. 19. I smoke twenty cigarettes every day. 20. Are you staying here long?—No, only four days. 21. These trees grow very quickly. 22. This man does not use enough soap. 23. We walk for an hour every evening. 24. This is the printing-press of our university; many books are printed here. 25. What are you doing? Are you not ashamed? 26. I do not remember what is the number of my room. 27. I do not sleep well in this hotel; people sing and talk and play on the piano the whole night. 28. He has fever and is lying in bed; the doctor says he is very ill. 29. Do you know whose cows and sheep these are which are grazing on this meadow? 30. We spend the summer in the village (=in the country) and the winter in the town.

CHAPTER 26

DEFINITIVE PRONOUNS

(AND THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED)

Sing. сѣв (*m.*), свѣ (*f.*), свѣ (*n.*) } = *all, the whole.*
 Pl. свѣ (*m.*), свѣ (*f.*), свѣ (*n.*) }

сѣм, сѣма, сѣмо } = (1) (*one*) *self*, (2) *alone.*
 сѣми, сѣме, сѣма }

ѣсти, ѣста, ѣсто } = *the same.*
 ѣсти, ѣсте, ѣста }

мнѣги, мнѣга, мнѣго } = *many a, many.*
 мнѣги, мнѣге, мнѣга }

дрѣги, дрѣга, дрѣго } = (*an*) *other* (also = *second*).
 дрѣги, дрѣге, дрѣга }

сѣв (another form of which is вѣс) is declined like нѣм, cf. pp. 66 ff., gen. sing. свѣга, &c.; irr. gen. pl. свѣју.

сѣм is declined like мѣж, cf. p. 67, gen. sing. сѣмог(a). In the same way are declined ѣсти, gen. ѣстѣг(a), мнѣги, gen. мнѣгѣг(a), and дрѣги, gen. дрѣгѣг(a). ѣсти is always

preceded by a demonstrative pronoun, usually *tâj*, when it means *the same*; when it means *the same sort of* it is followed by *такав*, cf. p. 135. *One another* is rendered by *један другог*, but occasionally this meaning is covered by the reflexive verbs, cf. pp. 114 ff.

Vocabulary

ла́рма = *noise*
 ра́жањ = *spit* (for roasting)
 др́во = *tree*
 про́леће = *spring* (of the year)
 је́сен = *autumn*
 со́как = *small street*
 зла́то = *gold*
 ра́кија = *brandy*
 са́вет = (1) *council*, (2) *advice*¹

сре́ћа = *luck, happiness*
 ле́то = *summer*
 зи́ма = *winter*
 не́вин = *innocent*
 неверова́тан = *improbable*
 прља́в = *dirty*
 прђшли = *former, previous*
 те́жак, те́шка = *heavy, difficult*

исте́ћи (*pfv.*, Class I, 1) = *to flow out*

изб́рисати (*pfv.*, Class III, 3)
 = *to wipe or brush*

по́кварити (*pfv.*, Class V, 1) = *to spoil*

огре́јати се (*pfv.*, Class III, 2)
 = *to warm oneself*

у́мити се (*pfv.*, Class III, 1)
 = *to wash (one's face)*

Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Ка́д сте ле́гли снђћ?—У је́данаест са́ти. 2. Све́ ви́но је исте́кло из бу́рета. 3. Исто́га да́на ка́да је он до́шао ми смо б́или у шуми и се́кли др́ва. 4. Је́сте ли му ка́зали да до́ђе су́тра у по́дне?—Је́сам. 5. Де́ца су се ту́кла на со́каку у́жасно ви́чући. 6. Сви́ су ми ка́зали да он ни́је у́редан чо́век. 7. Не мо́рате сви́ма ка́зати све́ што сте чу́ли. 8. Два́ ве́лика ко́ња ву́кла су те́шка ко́ла. 9. Ја́ јој ни́сам ре́као да́ сам вам да́о ње́ну

¹ *To advise* is са́ветовати (*pfv.*, Class III, 3).

књигу. 10. Ви сами сте ми рекли да им то не кажем. 11. Мoja сестра је добила исту такву хаљину. 12. Пси су синоћ много лајали. 13. Јесте ли се довољно огрејали?—Јесмо. 14. Ми смо му давали добре савете неколико пута. 15. Јуче смо јахали три сага. 16. Јесте ли избрисали лице и руке?—Нисам, немам убрус (огнешир). 17. Знате ли ко је убио овога човека?—Не знам. 18. Прешлога лета кад смо били у селу умивали смо се увек на реци. 19. Умивате ли се врућом или (х)ладном водом?—(Х)ладном. 20. Јесте ли се умиили?—Јесмо. 21. Јесте ли икад пили ракију?—Нисам никад. 22. Синоћ је киша страшно лила. 23. Шта си оно крио малочас када сам ушао у твоју собу?—Вашу књигу. 24. Чуо сам да су га везали па онда били; то је невероватно! 25. Прекјуче смо пекли јagne на ражњу. 26. Све што (се) сија није злато. 27. Многи (људи) су невино страдали. 28. С тим новцем други (човек) би био задовољан. 29. Много пута сам ти рекао да не слушаи рђаве савете. 30. Нису сви (људи) исте срѣке. 31. Он је сам певао свирајући на клавиру. 32. Он сам рекао ми је да не уме да свира. 33. Ви сами сте чули да она пева врло рђаво. 34. Јесте ли сами били у позоришту?—Не, био сам са својом сестром. 35. Ту исту гдѣпоу видео сам саму синоћ у деам часова да шета поред реке. 36. Мој сат је подварен (past participle passive).

Notes

1. *пекти*=to go to bed, *pfv.* 2. *истекло*, from *истећи*, stem тек-. 3. *сekli*, from *сeћи*, stem сек-. 5. Present, indeclinable participle from *викати*, cf. p. 140, 194. 13. *Pfv.*, cf. *грѣјати*, *trans.*, or *грѣјати се*, *reflex.*, *ipfv.* 16. Cf. *бpисати*, *ipfv.* 18. *прешлога*, cf. p. 40. 20. Cf. p. 142. 23. *оно*=that is often inserted redundantly in such sentences, lit. 'what that thou wast hiding'='what was that which thou wast'.

24. *nă*=*and*. 31. Present indeclinable participle from *снѣ-пати*, cf. pp. 144, 194. 35. *чѣс*, a synonym of *cât*, may also mean a (*short*) *while*, *cámy*: lit. *I saw her that she walks*.

English Sentences

1. Who is making that awful noise? Do they not know that we are tired and wish to sleep? 2. This summer has been very hot, but last summer was cold. 3. I have never drunk brandy; is it nice? 4. What is this small street called? 5. Why have you brought me a dirty towel? 6. Why did you not wipe your feet (*hõre*) when you came into the house?—We forgot. 7. Did you hear that noise?—No, I did not. 8. When did you arrive?—At 12 o'clock. 9. Why are these people fighting?—Because they do not like one another. 10. From what did he die?—From a wound. 11. I hope that you feel better now? 12. We bathed this morning in the lake; the water was quite warm. 13. How much must I give this porter? 14. Did you receive my letter? 15. How much did you pay for this suit of clothes? 16. We saw you in the town, but you did not see us. 17. We waited three hours. 18. Where did you buy this book?—I buy all my books in the same shop. 19. Have you tried this dish? It is very tasty.—No, I am a little afraid; I don't know of what it is. 20. They have forbidden us to walk in their garden. 21. We returned home the day before yesterday. 22. Have you finished your work? 23. We lived five years in Serbia. 24. How long did you stay in London? 25. All the newspapers say the same thing, but not one of them speaks the truth. 26. Give me another towel and another piece of soap. 27. Many people say that they cook well in that hotel. 28. Were you alone in the theatre last night? 29. That is the same man whom we saw yesterday. 30. She said this herself, but probably she was wrong.

CHAPTER 27

THE FUTURE TENSE OF *TO HAVE*, AND OF
OTHER VERBS

THIS tense is formed from all verbs in the same way as the future of бѣти, as mentioned on p. 73; the future of ѿмати = *to have* is :

Sing. 1.	ја ѣу ѿмати	or	ѿмаѣу.
2.	тѣ ѣеш ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣеш.
3.	ѡн ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.
	ѡна ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.
	ѡно ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.
Pl. 1.	мѣ ѣемо ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣемо.
2.	вѣ ѣете ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣете
3.	ѡни ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.
	ѡне ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.
	ѡна ѣе ѿмати	„	ѿмаѣе.

When the verb is reflexive the pronoun се is placed as follows : ја ѣу се вратити or вратѣу се = *I shall return*.

If the stem ends in з or с, these become ш before к in the shortened forms of the future.

грѣсти (cf. p. 140) = *to bite*, future : грѣшѣу, e.g. from гриз + ѣу, грис + ѣу ; пѣсти (cf. p. 141) = *to fall*, future : пѣшѣу, from пас + ѣу.

If the infinitive ends in -ѣи, the enclitic present forms of хтѣти (ѣу, ѣеш, ѣе, &c.) are not suffixed to the stem, but put after the infinitive as a separate word, e.g.

рѣѣи (cf. p. 142) = *to say*, shortened future :

рѣѣи ѣу	рѣѣи ѣемо
рѣѣи ѣеш	рѣѣи ѣете
рѣѣи ѣе	рѣѣи ѣе

The *exact future* of *имати* and of all other verbs is formed by means of the perfective present of *бѣти* (cf. p. 34) and the past participle of any verb, e.g.

- | | | | |
|---------------|------------|--------------|------------|
| 1. бѹдѣмъ имѹ | (f. имѹла) | бѹдѣмо имѹли | (f. имѹле) |
| 2. бѹдѣшъ имѹ | (f. имѹла) | бѹдѣте имѹли | (f. имѹле) |
| 3. бѹдѣ имѹ | | бѹдѹ имѹли | |
| | бѹдѣ имѹла | бѹдѹ имѹле | |
| | бѹдѣ имѹло | бѹдѹ имѹла | |

This tense is mostly used after *кад* = *when*, *if*, or *ако* = *if*, in temporal or conditional subordinate clauses, e.g.

1. Вѣдѣху васъ кадъ бѹдемъ имѹ времена = *I shall see you when I (shall) have time.*

2. Ако бѹдемъ имѹ времена доѣхъ ху даъ васъ вѣдимъ = *If I (shall) have time I shall come to see you.*

CHAPTER 28

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS

I, 1. By prefixing with the particle *не* such interrogative pronouns as *кѹ* = *who*? and *штѹ* (or *штѹ*) = *what*? these pronouns acquire an indefinite meaning, e.g. *нѣко* = *some one, any one*; *нѣшто* = *something, anything*.

2. *кѹѣ*, *кѹѹа*, *кѹѣ* are usually contracted with *нѣ* into :

Masc. Sing. нѣкѹ	Pl. нѣкѹ	} = <i>certain, some.</i>
Fem. Sing. нѣкѹа	Pl. нѣкѹ	
Neut. Sing. нѣкѹ	Pl. нѣкѹ	

3. *какаѹ*, *какѹа*, *какѹо* prefixed with *не* has the following meaning :

нѣкакаѹ (m.)	} = <i>of a certain sort, a certain (= нѣкѹ).</i>
нѣкакѹа (f.)	
нѣкакѹо (n.)	

4. From *коликѣ* the most usual form is the neuter :

нѣколико = *several* (requires the gen. pl.).

5. From *чѣјѣ* = *whose* are formed

нѣчијѣ, *нѣчијѣ*, *нѣчијѣ* = *some one's*.

II. Prefixed with *ни* these pronouns acquire negative meaning, e.g.

1. *нико* = *no one*, *ништа* = *nothing* ; when these pronouns are governed by a preposition, the latter separates their two halves, e.g. *ни од кога* = *not from any one* ; *нипошто* = *not for anything (in the world)*.

2. *никакав*, *никаква*, *-во* = *not of any kind, none*, e.g. *не видѣм никакав пѣт* = *I see no road at all*.

3. *ничијѣ*, *-јѣ*, *-јѣ* = *no one's*.

4. *нијѣдан*, *нијѣдна*, &c., are also used instead of *никоји*, &c.

III. The prefix *које-* makes these pronouns still more indefinite, e.g.

којекѣ = *any one whatever, just any one* ; *којешта* = *just anything* ; these have derogatory meaning. Similarly *којекакав*, *којечѣјѣ*.

IV. *гдѣ* has distributive force, e.g.

гдѣко = *some one at times*, also *гдѣкоји*, *гдѣ где* = *here and there*.

V. *што-* :

штоко = *this one and then that*, also *штошта*, *штокоји* (these are rarely used).

VI. The words *му драго* (lit. *to him dear*) are often added to all interrogative pronouns, e.g.

кѣ му драго = *any one you like* (*му* is impersonal) ; *што му драго* = *anything you like* ; *који му драго* = *кѣ му драго*, &c.

172 INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADVERBS

VII. By suffixing them with -год they acquire two different meanings, according to whether one word is formed or two :

кòгод = *some one*, but ко гòд = *whoever, any one whoever, any one you like* ; штòгод = *something, што гòд = whatever, anything whatever, anything you like*. Similarly који гòд, &c., какав гòд, &c., колико гòд, чији гòд, &c., but these only separately.

VIII. Prefixed with и they acquire the meaning 'ever', 'at all', e.g.

йко = *any one at all* ; йшта = *anything at all* ; йкоји, -а, -е, = *any at all* ; йчији = *any one's at all* ; йкакав = *any at all, of any kind whatever* ; йкако = *by any means at all* ; йкада = *ever (at all)*.

IX. The prefix ма gives them the meaning of '-ever', and is written separately, e.g.

ма кò = *whoever* ; ма штà = *whatever, &c.*

X. By prefixing them with свà, свè (cf. p. 165) they acquire a general meaning, e.g.

свàки, свàка, свàко = *every, each* ; свàшта, свàшто = *everything* ; свàчијй—свàчијà—свàчијè = *every one's* ; свè-колики, -а, -о, = *of every kind*¹; свàкàко means *in any case*.

CHAPTER 29

PRACTICE IN THE USE OF THE VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED

Vocabulary

тpгoвaц = *merchant*
pàдник = *labourer*
cтàдо = *flock*
вpàбaц = *sparrow*

пpóлаз = *passage*
ўвpeдa = *offence*
пpàво = *right*
дyг = *debt*

¹ Also свàковpстaн, свàковpснa, from вpстa = *a sort, a kind*.

рукав = *sleeve*
 хлад = *shadow, shade*
 храст = *oak* (also дуб)
 сак = *sack*
 икона = *icon (holy image)*
 стотина = *hundred*
 низбрдица = *slope*
 долина = *valley*
 (х)рана = *food*
 ватра = *fire*
 обала = *bank* (of river, &c.)
 впр = *pool*

улетети (*pfv.*, Class V, 2) = *to fly into*
 правити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pretend (to be)*
 радо = *gladly*

граница = *frontier*
 истина = *truth*
 неправда = *injustice*
 мрчина = *darkness*
 плата = *salary*
 гвозден, гвоздена = *iron*
 енглески = *English*
 српски = *Serbian*
 заузет = *occupied*
 студен, студена = *cold*
 вероватан = *probable*
 сличан = *like (+c+inst.)*

купати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to bathe* (intrans.)
 скакати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 b) = *to jump*
 погинути (*pfv.*, II) = *to be killed*

Reading Exercise

The verbs of the first group, cf. p. 139.

1. Хоћете ли се мнџго брџнути ако вања деца ђду¹ на реку?—Дабоме да хођу! 2. Његова брађа погинула су у ђвоме рату. 3. Деца често чеђну за свођом кућом. 4. Кџснули смо цео дањ ђдуђи² из ва́роши у село. 5. Зашто нџсте ушли у кућу него сте се мрзнули на сту́денџм ветру! 6. Ове ру́же ће брзо увенути. 7. Хоћете ли да дџгнете то пџро са пџда?—Врло радо. 8. Нека ста́ра гџспођа клџкнула је пред икону насређ цркве. 9. Нџсам могао да га ви́кнем јџр је бџо сувише дале́ко од мене. 10. Некакав чо́век са ду́гом бра́дом тргнуо ме је за ру́кав ка́да сам се нагнуо кроз прозор. 11. Ка́д сте се крџнули ђд куће те́ сте стџгли тако ра́но?—Крџнуо сам се у пџла че́тири. 12. Ни́ко

¹ Like џџи. ² Present indecl. participle from џџи, cf. p. 194.

ми није хтео помоћи да дигнем овај црак на кљуцу. 13. Она је неколико пута пала на двој низбрдици. 14. Ко год је хтео мдгао је сести у први ред. 15. Куповали су што год су хтели и сад се брину шта ће (се. радити) без новца. 16. Јесте ли срели малочас једног високог господина са шеширом у руци?—Нисам. 17. Срели смо децу која су побегла овим путем у ону долину. 18. Идуће године летоваћемо у селу. 19. Где сте зимовали прошле године?—У Италији. 20. Никада нећу моћи разликовати ваше синове, толико су слични. 21. Срби су војевали са Турцима неколико стотина година. 22. Радоваћемо се много ако будете дошли летос да будемо заједно у селу. 23. Енглези и Срби сигурно никада неће међу собом ратовати. 24. Зар ћемо се руковати колико год се пута данас будемо срели! 25. Кад мој пријатељ буде добио сина богато ћу га даривати. 26. Мајка ће миловати своје дете (па) ма какво оно било. 27. Нећу им сто пута казивати исту ствар. 28. Име-
нујте ми најбоље ствари из српске књижевности.

The verbs of the third group, cf. pp. 145 ff.

29. Ми нећемо хвалити кога му драго него само заслужне људе. 30. Живећемо како му драго. 31. Нећемо примати свачије савете. 32. Овога лета преводићете Шекспира. 33. Надао сам се да ћете увек говорити истину. 34. Желео сам да их видим синоћ, али нису дошли. 35. Увек ћемо мрзети неправду. 36. Јуче ме је много болела глава. 37. Он је толико грдио некога радника да сам га се сам ја стидео. 38. Бојим се да нећете моћи прендћити у овоме хотелу; све је заузето. 39. Колико сте књига данас купили?—Ниједну. 40. Само мала деца бдје се помрчине. 41. Ложите ли ватру у соби где спавате?—Никад. 42. Говорите ли енглески?

—Врло ма́ло. 43. Она је живела у Србији годину дана.
 44. Јесте ли преводили штѡгод са српског на енглески?—
 Нисам ништа. 45. Јесте ли много радили док сте били
 на универзитету?—Прилично. 46. Зар више не може
 (e.g. он, она) да трчи?—Не може. 47. Јутрос је
 ужасно грмело. 48. Кад ћете ми вратити књиге које
 (ог штѡ) сте узели пре неки дан?—Сутра. 49. Ми ћемо
 вам јавити ако га будемо видели. 50. Где си ухватио
 тога врапца?—У соби, улетео је кроз прозор. 51.
 Стадо оваца лежало је у хладу широког храста. 52.
 Прави се да не чује. 53. Купајући се скакали су са
 високе обале у дубоки впр. 54. Свакако, ви ћете доћи?
 —Да, доћи ћу чим примим плату. 55. Забранићемо вам
 пролаз овуда ако опет будете дошли с(а) кучетом. 56.
 Јесте ли пушили кадгод?—Јесам, кад сам био студент.
 57. Ударио га је по носу некаквим гвозденим штапом.
 58. Нечија кола била су синоћ пред његовом кућом.
 59. Хоћете ли да трчимо?—Не могу, мрзи ме. 60.
 Желите ли да му кажем да сам је видео?—Не. 61. Кад
 год сам је видео ја сам је поздравио љубазно колико год
 сам умео. 62. Нису ми платили сав дуг. 63. Нису
 га пустили преко границе. 64. Зашто трпите такве
 увреде! 65. Држим да сам у праву. 66. Је ли горела
 ватра синоћ у овој соби?—Није.

Notes

4. Many verbs whose infinitive ends in -нути lose the syllable
 -ну- in the past part. active, e.g. кнсули смо ог кнсли смо;
 5. мрзули ог мрзли; 8. клѣкнула ог клѣкла; 10. тргнуо ог
 тргао (ог тргѡ in conversation); нагнуо ог нагао (=нагѡ),
 &c. 11. Also крѣнути, *transitive pfv.* = to move some one or
 something. 13. папа, from пасти, stem пад-. 18. идѹћи,
 -а, -е, present part. act. from ѣћи, used here as an adjective=

176 USE OF VERBS ALREADY MENTIONED

following. 20. різни́ковати, used transitively = *to tell the difference between.* 24. спі́сти се (stem спет-), refl., *to meet (one another).*

English Sentences

1. This merchant pays very little to his workmen and workwomen. 2. They were lunching in the shade of this large oak. 3. The puppy bit the sleeve of his coat. 4. We are warming ourselves by the fire. 5. This workman gets very good pay, but he spends it all in the inn. 6. We were sitting on the bank of the pool. 7. At what o'clock shall you start tomorrow? 8. We met them at the end of the valley. 9. We cannot light the fire, we have no matches. 10. You are right and he is wrong. 11. This slope is so steep that we cannot ride up it. 12. Where did you buy your house? It looks a very good one. 13. This professor gets 25,000 *dinars* of salary, but nevertheless he has many debts. 14. These children are pasturing their flocks on our meadows; I told them that they may. 15. As soon as we returned we undressed and went to bed. 16. We shall stay here several weeks; we like this place very much. 17. If you give me some money I will go to buy some tobacco, some cigarettes, and some matches. 18. My foot hurts; I fancy my boot is too tight. 19. I must go and get a shave and get my hair cut. Where is the barber's?—At the end of this street. 20. He has broken his mirror; they say that is very unlucky, but I don't believe this. 21. Does this dog bite?—Yes, and this cat scratches. 22. When shall we arrive at Salonika?—In two hours. 23. How far is the frontier from here?—I don't know. 24. Why are you silent and do not answer me? 25. It is time that we get up and wash and shave and get dressed. Breakfast is already waiting. 26. At what time did you start? 27. Who gave you that book? 28. How much money have you spent? 29. Do you prefer wine or beer? 30. You are laughing at me.

CHAPTER 30

THE IMPERATIVE AND THE CONDITIONAL OF
ALL VERBS

I. Imperative

As indicated on p. 81, special forms exist for the 2nd pers. sing. and the 1st and 2nd pers. pl.

These exist in two forms, viz. -й, -ймо, -йте, and -j, -jмо, -jте; the first are taken by all the verbs of Classes I and II and by all those of Classes III and V whose presents are not formed with -jem, -жим; the second are taken by such verbs of Classes III and V as form their present with -jem, -жим, and by all the verbs of Class IV.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. is paraphrased, as in English, the forms of the present being used preceded by *нека* = *let*.

These endings, -й, -ймо, and -йте, are added to the *present* stem after cutting off the -ем or -им of the present, e.g.

трѣси = *shake*; нека трѣсе, трѣсимо, трѣсите, нека трѣсу; similarly ўзми(те) = *take*; пѡчни(те) = *begin*; зѡви(те) = *call*; дѣйни(те) = *lift*; мѣтни(те) = *put*; лѣгни(те) = *lie down*; сѣдни(те) = *sit down*; помѡгни(те) = *help*; ѡстани(те) = *stay*; пиши(те) = *write*; покажи(те) = *show*; пѡшли(те) = *send*; учи(те) = *learn*; види(те) = *see*; дрѣжи(те) = *hold*; трѣчи(те) = *run*.

The endings -j, -jмо, -jте are added to the present stem of the other verbs as follows:

чѣй = *listen, hear*; нека чѣје, чѣјмо, чѣјте, нека чѣју; similarly пѣй(те) = *drink*; брѣй(те) = *shave*; вѣрѣй(те) = *believe*; прѣчај(те) = *tell, relate*; не бѡй(те) се = *do not fear*; стѡй(те) = *stand*.

In *emphatic prohibitions* the imperative is preceded by *не*, e.g. не показѣй(те) = *do not show* (for the aspects

cf. pp. 121 ff.), otherwise very frequent use is made of the word нѐмѡј(те)=*don't*, which is really a contraction of the imper. of не мѡѣи=*not to be able*; this is followed by the infinitive, e.g. нѐмѡј(те) кáзати (показѣвати)=*don't tell (show)*; нѐмѡјмо=*do not let us*.

The 3rd pers. sing. and pl. negated is expressed thus : нѐка не дѡлази=*let him not come*.

Verbs of Class I whose roots end in г, к, х, change these letters into з, ц, с, e.g. рѣѣи=*to tell*; рѣци(те)=*tell*; рѣцимо=*let us say (let us suppose)*.

The imperative of разѡмети is разѡми(те)=*understand*; that of both дáвати and дѣти is дѣј(те)=*give*.

In verbs of Class II the н is frequently omitted in rapid speech, e.g. мѣтите, сѣдите.

II. Conditional

This is formed, as mentioned on p. 81, by means of the aorist of the verb бѣти, and the past part. active of any verb, e.g. from ѣмати :

- | | | |
|---------------------------|----|----------------------|
| 1. јѣ бих ѣмао (f. ѣмала) | or | ѣмао (f. ѣмала) бих. |
| 2. тѣ би ѣмао (f. ѣмала) | „ | ѣмао (f. ѣмала) би. |
| 3. ѡн би ѣмао | „ | ѣмао би. |
| ѡна би ѣмала | „ | ѣмала би. |
| ѡно би ѣмало | „ | ѣмало би |
| 1. мѣ би ѣмали (f. ѣмале) | or | ѣмали (f. ѣмале) би. |
| 2. вѣ би ѣмали (f. ѣмале) | „ | ѣмали (f. ѣмале) би. |
| 3. ѡни би ѣмали | „ | ѣмали би. |
| ѡне би ѣмале | „ | ѣмале би. |
| ѡна би ѣмала | „ | ѣмала би. |

The form би through the whole plural is more usual than the forms бѣємо, бѣете (cf. p. 82).

CHAPTER 31

ADVERBS

(AND THE USE OF THE IMPERATIVE AND THE
CONDITIONAL)

THE adverbs may be of the following kinds :

1. Temporal

баш = <i>just, exactly</i>	јуче = <i>yesterday</i>
вѣзда = <i>always</i>	кад от када = <i>when</i>
вѣћ = <i>already, (but)</i>	кадгод = <i>sometime or other</i>
вечѣрас = <i>this evening</i>	кад год = <i>whenever</i>
вѣчито = <i>eternally</i>	касно = <i>late</i>
више не . . . = <i>no longer (cf.</i>	касније = <i>later (on)</i>
p. 186)	каткад = <i>at times</i>
давно = <i>long since</i>	лане от лани = <i>last year</i>
данас = <i>to-day</i>	лѣти = <i>in the summer</i>
дању = <i>by day</i>	лѣтос = <i>this summer</i>
до сад = <i>till now</i>	малочас = <i>just recently</i>
доцкан = <i>late</i>	мало после = <i>a little later,</i>
доцније = <i>later (on).</i>	<i>presently</i>
зачас = <i>in a minute</i>	мало прѣ = <i>a few minutes ago</i>
затим = <i>after that</i>	махом = <i>most of the time</i>
зимѣ = <i>in the winter</i>	међутим = <i>meanwhile</i>
зимѣс = <i>this winter</i>	најзад = <i>at last, last of all</i>
йгда ¹ = <i>ever</i>	најпре = <i>first of all</i>
йкад = <i>ever (at all)</i>	напокон = <i>at the end of (of</i>
йстом = <i>at the same moment</i>	<i>time)</i>
једнѣм = <i>once, one day</i>	напослетку = <i>at last</i>
јесѣнас = <i>this autumn</i>	најпосле = <i>finally</i>
јутро = <i>this morning</i>	недавно = <i>lately</i>

¹ In the phrase што йгда можете = *as much as ever you can.*

нѣкад(а) = <i>formerly</i>	прòлетòс = <i>this spring</i>
нѣкад(а) = <i>never</i>	р̀ани́је = <i>earlier, previously</i>
нòѣас = <i>to-night</i>	р̀ано́ = <i>early</i>
нòѣу = <i>by night</i>	р̀ѣтко = <i>seldom, rarely</i>
òд̀авно́ = <i>давно́</i>	с̀ад́ ор с̀ада́ = <i>now</i>
òд̀м̀ах = <i>at once, immediately</i>	с̀в̀а́кад } = <i>always</i>
òд̀са́д = <i>henceforward</i>	с̀в̀а́гда } = <i>always</i>
òн̀да́ = <i>then</i>	с̀й̀но́ѣ = <i>last night</i>
он̀òм̀ад́ ор он̀ом̀ад̀не́ = <i>the other day</i>	ск̀òро́ = <i>soon</i>
òн̀ом̀л̀ани́ = <i>the other year</i>	с̀ў̀тра́ = <i>to-morrow</i>
òп̀ет́ = <i>again</i>	т̀ад́(̀а́) = <i>then</i>
òта́д(а) = <i>since then</i>	т̀ам̀ан́ ¹ = <i>only just</i>
òт̀ка́д(а) = <i>since when</i>	т̀еќ ¹ = <i>only (German erst),</i> <i>also = nevertheless, at any</i> <i>rate (cf. p. 193)</i>
з̀òне́ка́д = <i>at times</i>	ў̀òр̀зо́ = <i>soon</i>
п̀òс̀ле́ = <i>afterwards</i>	ў̀в̀ѣ́к = <i>always</i>
п̀òс̀лє́п̀òд̀не́ = <i>in the after-noon</i>	ў̀в̀ечє́ = <i>in the evening</i>
п̀òт̀òм́(е) = <i>after that</i>	ў̀јут̀рѣ́ = <i>in the morning</i>
пр̀ѣ́ = <i>formerly (also = ago)</i>	ў̀оч́и = <i>on the eve</i>
пр̀ѣ́п̀òд̀не́ = <i>in the morning</i>	ў̀ск̀òро́ = <i>soon</i>
пр̀ѣ́к̀јучє́ = <i>the day before yesterday</i>	шт̀ò пр̀ѣ́ = <i>as soon as possible</i>
пр̀ѣ́к̀(ò)с̀ут̀ра́ = <i>the day after to-morrow</i>	ч̀а́к = <i>even</i>
пр̀ѣ́кс̀ино́ѣ = <i>the night before last</i>	ч̀а́сом́ ор ч̀а́ском́ = (1) <i>for a minute, (2) in a minute</i>
	ч̀ѣ́сто́ ор ч̀ѣ́сто́ п̀ў̀та́ = <i>often</i>

2. Local

б̀л́и́зу́ = <i>near by</i>	г̀дє́гдє́ = <i>in places</i>
б̀л́и́же́ = <i>nearer</i>	г̀дє́гòд́ = <i>somewhere or other</i>
г̀дє́́ = <i>where</i>	г̀дє́г̀òд́ = <i>wherever</i>

¹ + штò = *barely*, cf. p. 213.

гõре = <i>up above, (to) above</i>	òдāвдē = <i>from here, hence</i>
далēко = <i>far</i>	òдаклē = <i>from where, whence</i>
дāље = <i>further</i>	òдāндē = <i>from yonder</i>
дēсно = <i>to the right, on the right</i> ¹	òдатлē = <i>from there, thence</i>
дòвдē = <i>as far as here</i>	òдовуд = <i>from this direction</i>
дòкле = <i>how far (=to what distance</i> ²)	òдонуд = <i>from that direction</i>
дòле = <i>down below, (to) below</i>	òзгò or одòзгò = <i>from above</i>
дòндē = <i>to that place (yonder)</i>	òздо or одòздò = <i>from below</i>
дòглē = <i>to that place</i>	òнамо = <i>thither</i>
йзблйза = <i>from close to</i>	òнде = <i>yonder</i>
издалēка = <i>from afar</i>	òнудā = <i>that way</i>
изнýтра = <i>(from) inside</i>	òстрāг = <i>from behind</i>
кāмо = <i>whither</i>	òткуд(а) = <i>whence</i>
кýд or кýдā = <i>whither</i>	òтуд = <i>thence</i>
куд гòд = <i>whithersoever</i>	позāди = <i>behind</i>
лēво = <i>to the left, on the left</i> ³	пòпрēко = <i>across</i>
мēстимице = <i>in places</i>	свýдā = <i>everywhere</i>
нāдесно = <i>дēсно</i>	спòља = <i>(from) outside</i>
нāзāд = <i>backwards</i>	спрēда = <i>(from) in front</i>
нāлēво = <i>лēво</i>	тāмо = <i>there, thither</i>
нāпоље = <i>(to) out of doors</i>	тāмо—āмо = <i>hither and thither</i>
нāпољу = <i>out of doors</i>	тý = <i>(1) here, (2) there</i>
нāпрēд = <i>forwards</i>	тýдā = <i>that way</i>
нāтрāг = <i>backwards</i>	ýздýж = <i>along, lengthwise</i>
нēгде = <i>somewhere</i>	унāзāд = <i>назад</i>
нйгде = <i>nowhere</i>	унāкрет = <i>across, crosswise</i>
òвамо = <i>hither</i>	унāпрēд = <i>напред</i>
òвде = <i>here</i>	унýтра = <i>inside</i>
òвудā = <i>this way</i>	чāк = <i>even, right up to</i>

¹ Ор с дēснē стрāне.³ Ор с лēве стрāне.² *How far is it to . . . ?* = кòлико је далēко до . . . ?

3. Modal

бада̀ва = *in vain, gratis*ба̀р = *at least*бѐсплатно = *gratis, without paying*бр̀во = *quickly, fast*вѐдма = *very*вѐћинџм = *for the most part*ви́ше = *no more, no longer*вр̀ло = *very*го̀отово = *almost*до̀иста = *truly, really*до̀некле = *to a certain extent (also lit. of place)*дру̀кчије = *differently*жму̀рећкѣ = *closing the eyes*за̀иста = *до̀иста*за̀једно = *together*за̀луд = *in vain*за̀мало = *у̀мало*за̀р = *really ? (cf. p. 33)*за̀то = *for that reason*за̀це́ло = *for sure*за̀што = *why*зби́ља¹ = *in very fact, really*зби́љскѣ¹ = *seriously*изне́нада = *suddenly*и́на́че = (1) *otherwise, else ;*
(2) *in any case ;* (3) *as a rule*и́па́к = *however, nevertheless*ја̀мачно = *surely, I expect*је́ди́но = *solely*је́два = *barely, hardly, scarcely*је́ш = *still, yet, more (some more)*ка̀о = *as (like), cf. p. 210*ка̀ко = *how*како гџд = *in whatever way*к(а)оба́јаги = *making out that (colloquial)*кра̀дом = *stealthily*кри́шом = *secretly*лежѣ́кѣ = *lying down*ма̀кар = *at least*ма̀ло по̀ ма̀ло = *little by little, by degrees*ма̀лчице = *a little bit*мо̀жда = *perhaps*му̀ком = *silently*му́чкѣ = *in a cowardly way*на̀валице } = *purposefully*

на̀влаш }

на̀име = *namely*наопà́чке = *wrong way round*на̀равно = *naturally*на̀рочито = *especially*на̀тра̀шкѣ = *backwards*¹ Cf. џзби́љан = *serious, grave, earnest.*

наузнѧко = *on one's back*
 нашински or нашки = *in our*

fashion

нѣкѧко = *in a certain way*

необично = *unusually*

немилице = *mercilessly*

неприметно = *imperceptibly*

нехотицѣ = *unwillingly*

ниѧко = *in no way, not at all*

нипошто = *not for anything*

ничицѣ = *prone*

обычно = *usually*

овѧко = *in this way*

одвѣѧ } = *too much*
 одвишѣ }

одједанпѣт } = *all at once*
 одједном } (*suddenly*)

онѧко = *in that way*

особито = *especially*

пѣшке or пѣшице = *on foot*

поимѣнце = *by one's*¹ *name*

појединцѣ = *singly*

полагѧно = (1) *slowly*; (2)
gradually

пѣмало = *slightly*

пѣлако = *slowly*

пѣсепце = *one at a time*

пѣстепено } = *gradually*
 пѣступно }

пѣтпуно = *completely*

потрѣушкѣ = *on one's stomach*

правѣ = *right (just, straight,*
lit. and fig.)

прилично = *fairly*

равно = *all the same* (+ *ми*
je)

само = *only*

свејѣдно = *all the same, it*
doesn't matter

сѧсвѣм = *quite*

свѧкѧко = *certainly, by all*
means, surely

свѣјски = *in a kindred spirit*

сѣгѣрно = *without fail, for*
certain

скѣпа = *together*

стѣга = *for that reason*

стојѣѧкѣ = *standing up*

сѣвише = (1) *too much*; (2)
too (e.g. *tired*)

тѧјом = *secretly*

тѧко = *so, thus, in that way,*
to such an extent

тѧкѣже(p) = *also, likewise*

тѧко ѣстѣ = *in just the same*
way

тѧчно = (1) *exactly*; (2)
punctually

тѣбож = *as it were, making*
out that

ѣзалѣд = *зѧлуд*

ѣмало = *almost*

¹ *by name, namely* = *наимѣ*.

уопште = *in general*хѣтимицѣ = *willingly*ѡпрѣво = *just so*шїрѡм = *wide open*

тїм (inst. of тѡ) followed by бѡле, гѡре, вїше, мање = *by so much the better, all the better, worse, more, less*; this may be preceded by у кѡлико (cf. p. 135).

4. Quantitative

(Cf. also modal adverbs)

вїше = *more*нѣјвише = *most, at most*вїше не = *no more* (нѣманѣјмање = *least, at least*вїше . . . = *there is no more + gen. . . .*)нѣколико = *several, a few*дѡвѡлно } = *enough, sufficiently, fairly*нї у колико } = *not in the least*дѡста }
кѡлико = *how much, how many*прїлично = *fairly, rather*прѡсечно = *on an average*сѡвише = *too much*мѡло = *little, a few*сѡвише мѡло = *too little*мање = *less*толикѡ = *so much, so many*мнѡго } = *much, many, a great deal, a lot*ѡмѡло = *nearly*

5. Adjectival Adverbs

These are formed from adjectives as follows :

гѡсподеки = *in a gentlemanly way*прїјатѣљски = *in a friendly way*дѡбро = *well, all right*рѣѡво = *very bad(ly)*їѡнѣчки = *heroically*рѡжно = *bad, badly*кѡѡавички = *in a cowardly way*српскї = *in Serbian (fashion or language)*

Vocabulary

њїѡа = *field*жѣга = *great heat*рѡзѡалине = *ruins*ѡмрѣл, кїшѡбрѡн = *umbrella*тѡјна = *secret*мрѡз = *frost*

време = *time, weather*кйша = *rain*гађање = *shooting*нѡв = *new*јѡк (*nom. pl. masc., јѡки*),
јѡка = *strong*напасти (*pfv., I, 1, and II*) =
*to attack*тражити (*ipfv., V, 1*) = *to seek*
увѣсти (*pfv., I, 1*) = *to lead*
*into*забѡравити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*
*forget*пѡверити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to con-*
*fide*грѹб, грѹба = *rude, rough*рѹжан = *ugly*сйгѹран = *sure*интересѡтан = *interesting*лѡнскй = *of last year*ѡдати (*pfv., IV*) = *to betray*развадити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to*
*separate*затвѡрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to shut*¹отвѡрити (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to open*²вѣжбати се (*ipfv., IV*) = *to prac-*
*tise*јѡвити се (*pfv., V, 1*) = *to let*
know about oneself

Reading Exercise

1. Мѡлим вас, свйрајте штѡгод. 2. Рѡдите што гѡд
хѡћете, мѣни је прѡво. 3. Кѡжите му, мѡлим вас, нека
спѡва. 4. Нѣмѡјте га тѹћи, тѡ је дѡиста грѹбо ѡд вас.
5. За њѣга би бйло мнѡго бѡље да йде ѡдмах ѡдѡвдѣ. 6.
Рѡдије бих ѹмро нѣго да ѡдѡм тѡјну кѡју ми је пѡверно
мѡј пријатељ. 7. Нѣ би трѣбало купѡвати му нѡво ѡдѣло,
ѡво је сѡсвйм дѡбро. 8. Зѡвите га да се врѡти, забѡ-
равио сам дѡ му кѡжем јѡш нѣшто. 9. Увѣдите је унутра.
10. Изѡђите напѡље, мнѡго је пријѡтније у ѡвѡме хлѡду.
11. Нѣка йду лѣтѡс у ѡно сѣло у кѡме смо мй бйли лѡни.
12. Зймѹс ћѡмо ймати јѡке мрѡзеве. 13. Лѣтѡс ће бйти
вѣка жѣга нѣго лѡнске гѡдине. 14. Дйвно би бйло ѡко би
вечѣрас ѡтишли на кѡнцер(а)т. 15. Дѡшао бих прѡлетѡс
дѡ вас макар (ог бѡр) на јѣдан дѡн ѡко бѹдем ймаѡ врѣмена.
16. Куд гѡд се крѣнете њѣга ћете срѣсти. 17. Нѣмѡјте
толико вйкати; ћѹтите мѡло ако мѡжете. 18. Ѳвѡј кѡњ

¹ *Shut* (adj.) is затворен.² *Open* (adj.) is ѡтворен.

је веома миран, можете му прићи сасвим близу. 19. Онѐ развалине су врло интересантне, само спѡла нѐ можете ништа видети, морате љћи унутра. 20. Свакако (да) би било сигурније лично с њим да говорите о томе. 21. Нѐмѡјте нипошто говорити о мени, иначе ће се све свршити наопачке. 22. Лежећке се нѐ може свршити никакав посао. 23. Ружно би било ако то љзме (т.ј.¹ он) кришом. 24. Нѐмѡјте крадом изаћи нѐго се јавите. 25. Отворите ширѡм врата и прозоре. 26. Тукли би се нѐмилице да их нису развадили. 27. Зовите свакога поимѐнце. 28. Војници су лежали потрбушке вежбајући се у гађању. 29. Оно што тражите нѐ можете наћи жмурѐчке. 30. Нѐ би требало ѡрати (њиву) прѐ нѐго што кпша падне. 31. Свршите часком тај посао па онда идите куд гѡд хѡћете. 32. Дајте му само малчице (ог маљо) да прѡба. 33. Кукавички је мучки напасти. 34. Нѐма више хлѐба. 35. Није више ѡвде.

English Sentences

1. We should have come yesterday if we had been able.
2. If I had known that it will rain I should have brought an umbrella.
3. It would be better to start at once, for it is already very late.
4. If you had listened you would have understood.
5. Those are the ruins of an old monastery.
6. What are you looking for?
7. If you have no objection I shall open the window.
8. If I had had more money I should have given him more.
9. Let me know as soon as you arrive.
10. Shut the door, there is a terrible draught; we shall all catch cold.
11. If you practised more, you would play better.
12. If I had the money I should go to the theatre this evening.
13. The soldiers are very hungry and very thirsty.
14. As soon as I finish this job I shall go away.
15. I have found an interesting book.
16. If you had been more amiable she would have confided to you her secret.
17. These are last

¹ то јѐст = i.e.

year's apples, but they are still quite good. 18. I am sure that this would be best. 19. The wind is so strong that I cannot open the window. 20. I have forgotten what I was going to say. 21. If you had done this, they would have killed you. 22. The banks of this river are very steep, and the river itself is very deep and swift. 23. If you had asked him he would have told you. 24. When we came out of the house it was already late and we did not see any one anywhere. 25. In the morning it rained hard, but in the afternoon the weather was fine.

CHAPTER 32

THE AORIST, IMPERFECT, AND PLUPERFECT

I. The Aorist (cf. p. 81)

THIS tense, rarely used in conversation, is formed from the infinitive stem by cutting off the infinitive ending -ти and adding the following personal endings :

Sing. 1st pers. —х	Pl. 1st pers. —мо
2nd —	2nd —сте
3rd —	3rd —ше

Verbs of Class I, 1, insert -o- between the root (ending in a consonant) and these endings, and in the 2nd and 3rd pers. sing. add -e ; the following forms are thus obtained :

I. трécox, трéce, трéce, трécocmo, трécocte, трécome = *shook* ; similarly ўзex = *took* ; пѣчex = *began* ; лѣrox = *lay down* ; звѣх = *called*.

II. мѣтнux, мѣтну, &c. = *put*.

III. чѣх, чѣ, &c. = *heard* ; писах, писа, &c. = *wrote* ; вѣровах, вѣрова, &c. = *believed*.

IV. прічах, пріча, &c. = *told, related*.

V. ўчих, ўчи, &c. = *learnt* ; вѣдex, вѣде, &c. = *saw*.

A great many verbs of other classes follow the aorist-formation of Class I (often inserting a д), in addition to or to

the exclusion of their own forms, e.g. from *ѣмати*, aorist : *ѣмадох*, *ѣмаде*, &c., as well as *ѣмах* ; from *знѣти* = *to know*, aor. : *знѣх* and *знѣдох* ; from *ѡстати* = *to remain*, *ѡстах* and *ѡстадох* ; from *хтѣти* = *to wish*, *хтѣдох* and, rarely, *хтѣх* ; the aorist of *донѣти* = *to bring* is in the 1st pers. sing. *дѡнех* or *донѣдох*, but in the 3rd sing. only *дѡнесе* ; that of *дѣти* = *to give*, *дѣдох*, *дѣде* ; that of *ѣѣти* = *to eat*, *ѣѣдох*, *ѣѣде*, &c.

Verbs of Class I with roots in *г*, *к*, *х*, change these in the 2nd and the 3rd pers. sing. of the aorist, e.g. *рѣѣти* = *to tell*, *то say*, *рѣѣдох*, *рѣѣче*, &c. From the verb *прѣснути* = *to burst*, root *прѣк-*, the aor. is *прѣѣдох*, *прѣѣте* (from *прѣк* + *е*, *прѣче*).

II. The Imperfect (cf. p. 91)

This tense, still more rarely used in conversation, is formed by means of the following personal endings which are added sometimes to the present and sometimes to the infinitive stem :

	I.	II.	III.
Sing. 1.	-ѣх	-ѣх	-иѣх
2.	-ѣше	-ѣше	-иѣше
3.	-ѣше	-ѣше	-иѣше
Pl. 1.	-ѣсмо	-ѣсмо	-иѣсмо
2.	-ѣсте	-ѣсте	-иѣсте
3.	-ѣху	-ѣху	-иѣху

The following are examples of this tense in the various classes of verbs. (N.B. the final consonant or consonants of the root often change as the result of the -j.)

I. *трѣѣсиѣх*, *трѣѣсиѣше*, &c., *звѣх*, *звѣше*, &c.

II. *тѡнѣх*, *тѡнѣше*, &c. (from *тон* + *ѣх*), *мрѣжнѣх*, &c. (from *мрѣн* + *ѣх*) = *was getting cold* ; *кѣшнѣх*, &c. (from *кѣш* + *ѣх*) = *was getting wet*.

III. *чѣѣх*, *чѣѣше*, &c., *пѣѣх*, *пѣѣше*, &c.

IV. *прічāх, прічāше, &c. = was telling, relating.*

V. *ўчāх, ўчāше, &c., хвāљāх, хвāљāше, &c. (from хвāлити = to praise, хвал + јах), вѣђāх, вѣђāше, &c. (from вид + јах).*

III. The Pluperfect

This tense is never used in conversation, and not often in writing. It is formed in two ways : (1) from the past tense of бѣти (cf. p. 59) and the past participle active of any verb, or (2) from the imperfect of бѣти (cf. p. 91) combined with the past participle active, e.g. *имати* :

1. Sing. 1. *ја сам бѣо имао* or *бѣо сам имао.*

Pl. 2. *ви сте бѣли имали* or *бѣли сте имали.*

2. Sing. 1. (*ја*) *бѣјāх имало (имала f.).*

Pl. 2. (*ви*) *бѣјāсте (or бѣсте) имали, &c.*

CHAPTER 33

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

I. Conjunctions

1. COPULATIVE : *и = and ; ѿ—ѿ = both—and ; како—тако и = both—and ; а = (1) and, (2) but ; па = (1) and (especially in the phrase па онда = and than), (2) but ; те = and (often used in consecutive sense = in such a way that, with the result that) ; нѣ = not even (requires another negative, e.g. нѣмāм ни пāре = I have not even a centime) ; нѣ—нѣ (or нѣти—нѣти) = neither—nor ; дā ли = whether (cf. p. 33).*

2. DISJUNCTIVE : *или = or ; ѿли—ѿли (or more rarely, āли—āли, ја(ли)—ја(ли), вѣл(а)—вѣл(а)) = either—or ; бѣло—бѣло (or ѿли) = whether—or ; кѡје—кѡје = counting both—and ; чāс—чāс = at one time—at another.*

190 CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

3. ADVERSATIVE: *à, àли, àма, нèго* (or *нò*), *пàк* and *вèх* all mean *but*, *à* and *àли* being the most usual, the other being stronger; *ипàк*=*however, nevertheless, after all*; *тà*=*well then*; *мà*=*even if only*; *мàкар*=*at least* (also = *although*).

4. CAUSAL: *јèр* (seldom *јèрбо*)=*because*, *пòшто*=*since*.

5. CONCLUSIVE: *дàкле*=*and so*; *èле*=*and thus*; *дабòме*=*of course, I should say so*.

6. CONDITIONAL: *àко*=*if*; *кàд* (lit.=*when*)=*if*; *дà*=*if*.

7. CONCESSIVE: *прèмда, мàда, иàко*=*although*; *мàкар*=*even though*.

8. TEMPORAL: *кàд*=*when*; *пòшто*=*after*; *откàко*=*ever since*; *прè нèго*=*before*; *дòк*=*while*; *дòк не*=*until*.

9. FINAL: *нèка*=*in order that*; *èда*=*if possibly*; *кàко би*=*in such way—that*.

Affirmation and negation are expressed by *јест* (or *јèс*)=*yes*, really the 3rd pers. sing. of *бѣти*=*to be*; *дà* and *јà* are also used for *yes*; *нè*=*no*, also *нèје* (lit.=*is not*); in general answers are frequently given by repeating part or the whole of the verb contained in the question, e.g. *јèсте ли га вѣдели?*=*did you see him?* or *have you seen him?* *јèсàм* or *вѣдео сам*=*yes, I have*; *јèсте ли то чу̀ли?*=*did you hear that?* *нѣсам*=*no, I didn't*.

II. Interjections

The commonest of these are: *здравò*=*hail! good-day!* *бòгами*=*indeed, in very truth*; *дабòме*=*of course*; *јàо*=*oh, dear!* (expresses pain and sorrow); *тèшко мèни*=*goodness gracious me!* *Бòже мòј*=*my God!* *фàла* (or *хвàла*) *Бòгу!*=*thank God!* *зàбога*=*good heavens!* *кўку* or *кўку мèни*=*alas!* (also *лèле*); *ўрà!*=*hurrah!* *јè л'те* (or *јèл'те*)?=*is it not so, n'est-ce pas?* *глè* or *глèте*=*look!*

ѣво¹=*here you are (he or it is), voici*; ѣто¹ and ѣно¹=*there you are (he or it is), voilà*; е пѧ=*well?* ѣ!=*fancy that!* ѣ!¹=*hi, I say!* добро дѡшли=(you, pl., are) *welcome*; дѣде(р)=*well, go on then*; дѣла=*come* (e.g. дѣла кѧжи ми=*come, tell me*); хѧжде(те)=*come here*, also хѧждемо=*let us go*; бѣѣ=*flop!* ѣш=*be off!* мѡре (or брѣ) is a general word of address, supposed to be derived from the Greek Μώρος.

Common exclamations derived from verbs are: ѣди(те), ѡдлази(те) (N.B. this latter is much stronger)=*go away*; жури(те)=*hurry*² *up!* (полѧко, *adv.*=*go slow!*); слѡбодно,³ ѣѣи(те)=*come in* (sc. *into the room*); ѣѣти(те)=*be silent*⁴; стѡј(те)=*stop*; чѣкај(те)=*wait*; извѣни(те), or опрѡстите=*excuse me, I beg your pardon*; пѧзите=*take care, mind*; извѡл(и)те=*pray, be so good*. For greetings, passing the time of day, cf. p. 43.

Vocabulary

свѣтитеѣ=saint
гѡст=guest
мѧнастир=monastery
клима=climate
мѡре=sea
зѣмѣа=earth, ground, country
кѧпа=cap
сѧбѣа=sabre, sword
кѣпа=cup (of metal)⁵
кѡвчег=ark
срѣце=heart

смрѣ=death
зѧповѣст=order
рѣч=word
слѡво=letter of the alphabet
нѧчин=manner, way
сѣседство=neighbourhood
влѧст=power
ѣѣбав=love
блѧго=treasure, blessedness
ѣправа=government
Нѡје=Noah

¹ N.B. these all take the acc., e.g. ѣво га=*there he (or it) is*.

² To hurry is жури(и), or жури(и) се, *ipfv.*, Class V, 1, also хѣтати, Class V, 2.

³ N.B. слѡбодно also means *you may, it is allowed*; нѣје слѡбодно=*you mayn't*, besides having its literal meaning of *free, disengaged*.

⁴ Also мѣр, тишина (=quiet).

⁵ N.B. a tea-cup or coffee-cup is шѡѣа and шѡѣица.

грабити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to grab*
 продужити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to continue*
 проговорити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to say, to begin, to speak*
 управљати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to govern*
 променити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to change (trans.)*¹
 ударати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to strike*
 збвнути (*pfv.*, II) = *to call once*
 пливати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to swim*
 растргнути (*pfv.*, II) = *to pull apart*
 чист = *clean*

дијелити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to divide*²
 разговарати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to converse*
 удавати се (*ipfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to get married (of a girl)*
 жєнити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to get married (of a man)*
 састати се (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 106-7) = *to meet*
 разбећи се (*pfv.*, cf. pp. 106-7) = *to run apart*
 њскрен = *sincere*
 сѣт = *satisfied*

Reading Exercise

1. Плáтите му кòлико трáжи пá ће вам рáдити. 2. Мòлим вас љдите у Бєдград те свршите сáми тáј пòсао. 3. Ни твој брáт нє може љћи. 4. Нà тў ствáр нємате прáво ни ви ни òни. 5. Пòсле тòга ни јá, ни òн, ни нєгов брáт не проговорисмо ни рєчи ò теби. 6. Òни су одјèдном промєнили и зємљу, и клíму, и сýседство, и нáчин живòта и нáчин ўправе. 7. Нє треба ўправљати ни сáбљом, ни пўшком, ни блáгом ни влáшћу вєћ јèдино љскреном лўбављу. 8. Йди те га зòвни. 9.³ Йли гр́ми, љл' се зємља трєсе, љл' ўдара мòре у брèгове? Нљти гр́ми, нљт' се зємља трєсе, нљт' ўдара мòре у брèгове, вєћ дљјеле блáго свèтитељи. 10.³ Ђли вòлиш пò мòру пливати, тли вòлиш на вáтри гòрети, тли вòлиш дà те рáстргнємо? 11.³ Донєси ми јèдну кўпу вíна, јáли вíна, јáли вòде хлáдне. 12. Вòл' ти пљти, вòл' ти кáпу кўпити. 13. Свљ се рáзбегòше, кòје пò шуми, кòје пò пољу. 14. Дє-

¹ + се, *intrans.*

² In the *e*-dialect : дєлити.

³ From national Serbian poetry.

дер, рѣци ми гдѣ си био ? 15. Хајде-те сви ђвамо. 16. Како му драго ¹ тек ² ми ђстасмо и без кола и без коња, те продужисмо пут пѣшке. 17. Тек што смо се састали кад он доби заповест да се крене даље. 18. Тек (ог бар) ви ми нѣмојте ђ томе говорити. 19. Јѣхашу, пијашу, жѣнаху се, удаваху се до ђнога дана кад Нђје ује у коѡвѡег. 20. Гђсти су сѣдели, јѣли, пили и разговарали се. 21. Старо и младо, жѣна и дѣте, све ти ³ тѡ ѣнглѣски гѡвори. 22. Бѣсмо ли код какве цркви или код манастира, не умѣм казати. 23. А како да га се не бѡјимо ? Њѣга, који се није никога бѡјао ! 24. Благо ђнима који су чистѡга срца ! 25. Граби и ти ђд срмти што гѡд више мѡжеш (proverb).

English Sentences

1. Wait a little, while I am buying cigarettes. 2. Do you know how to swim ? 3. That cap is too small for you. 4. What is that monastery on that hill ? 5. Our country is very beautiful, but the climate is bad. 6. The guests are all sitting in the garden and drinking coffee and eating jam. 7. My sister married a Frenchman. 8. Her brother married a Russian. 9. He could not find his things anywhere. 10. Suddenly it began to thunder and lighten. 11. We started at 9 o'clock this morning and returned at 10 o'clock in the evening. 12. Some one is knocking on the door. 13. Did you come on foot ?—No, we rode. 14. Excuse me, I did not know that you are here. 15. Bring me an egg, a piece of bread, some butter, some salt, and a cup of coffee. 16. I never eat meat ; have you no fish or vegetables or cheese ? 17. Let us go to the theatre this evening. 18. Goodness gracious me, it is already 11 o'clock. 19. I think that the weather will change. 20. Last night there was a strong frost.

¹ 'However that may be,' 'be that as it may.'

² Nevertheless, the upshot was that.

³ Ethic dative, quoted from a letter of Dositheus Obradović, who visited England in the eighteenth century.

CHAPTER 34

THE PARTICIPLES AND THE PASSIVE

SERBIAN possesses four participles : the present and past indeclinable participles, and the active and passive declinable past participles.

I. Present Indeclinable Participle.

This is formed from the 3rd pers. pl. of the present tense by adding the ending -ћи :

- I. трéсѹћи (from трéсти).
- II. тóнѹћи (from тóнути).
- III. пèјѹћи (from пèти), пèшѹћи (from пèсати).
- IV. òмáјѹћи (from òмати).
- V. ùчèћи (from ùчити).

This participle is only formed from *imperfective* verbs. It can only refer to the subject of the sentence and has adverbial use, e.g. она је пèвала òдѹћи поред јèзера = *she was singing (while) walking along the lake*.

From бèти the form of this participle is бѹдѹћи ; as an adjective this word means *the coming*, as does also òдѹћи = *the following, the next*.

II. Past Indeclinable Participle.

This is formed from the inf. stem by adding to it -в, or more commonly -вши :

- I. пòчèв(ши), ùзèв(ши), cf. p. 105.
- II. мèтнѹв(ши), cf. p. 106.
- III. чѹвши, пèсáвши.
- IV. òмáвши, чèтáвши, прèчáвши.
- V. ùчèвши, вèдèвши.

This participle can be formed from verbs of either aspect.

Its use is similar to that of the pres. indecl. part., e.g. *мѣтнѹвши шѣшїр на главу он изаѣе из кѹхе* = *having put his hat on his head he went out of the house*.

The participle бѣвши, from бѣти = *to be*, is seldom used, but is common as an adjective meaning *the former, the late*.

From ѣти the form of this participle is ѣшавши¹; also verbs of Class I with roots in a consonant insert -a-, e.g. трѣсавши, from трѣсти.

III. The Active Declinable Past Participle.

The formation of this, and its use in forming the compound past tense, has already been described, cf. pp. 59, 148. This participle is often used impersonally in such sentences as *играю се, пѣвало и пію до пѣ(ла) нѣхи* = *dancing, singing, and drinking was kept up till midnight*; *у ѡвѣм зѣмљотрѣсу прѡпало је много хѣљадѣ љѹди* = *many thousand people perished in that earthquake*.

IV. The Passive Declinable Past Participle.

This is formed from inf. stem by adding the endings -т, -та, -то; -н, -на, -но, and -ен, -ена, -ено; the words thus formed are declined like indefinite adjectives.

The endings -т, -та, -то are taken by verbs of Class I with an inf. stem ending in -е, e.g. пѣчѣт, пѣчѣта, пѣчѣто = *begun*, from пѣчѣти, ѹзѣт, &c. = *taken*, from ѹзѣти, and by all verbs of Class II, e.g. дѣгнѹт, &c. = *lifted*, from дѣгнути.

The endings -н, -на, -но are taken by all verbs with an inf. stem in -а, e.g. звѣн, &c. = *called*, from звѣти, брѣјѣн, &c. = *shaved*, from брѣјати, писан, &c. = *written*, from писати, читѣн, &c. = *read*, from читати (Class IV), дрѣжан, &c. = *held*, from дрѣжати.

The endings -ен, -ена, -ено are taken by verbs of Class I

¹ And also, of course, from all its compounds.

with roots in a consonant, whereupon г, к, х become ж, ч, ш, e.g. плѣтен, &c. = *plaited, knitted*, from плѣсти, cf. p. 105, сѣчен, &c. = *cut*, from сѣћи ; root сек-, cf. p. 105, and by the verbs of Class V, the roots of which also undergo changes because of the combination of -и, the last letter of the stem with the ending -ен, e.g. хва́лен, &c. = *praised*, from хва́лити (хвали + ен), ви́жен, &c. = *seen* (from види + ен), вра́жен, &c. = *returned*, from вра́тити (врати + ен), пу́šten, &c. = *released*, from пу́стити (пусти + ен), у́чен, &c. (this is now considered an adjective = *learned*), from у́чити (учи + ен).

Verbs with stems in -у mostly take -ен, inserting -в- between the two, e.g. чѹвен, &c. (this also has become an adjective = *famous*), from чѹти (чу + ен), обѹвен, &c. = *shod*, from обѹти се, Class III, 1a = *to put one's boots on* (обу + ен).

Verbs with stems in -и vary, e.g. лѣти = *to pour*, вѣти = *to wind*, Class III, 1a, have лѣт, вѣт, but more commonly лѣжен and вѣжен, and even лѣвен ; бѣти = *to beat*, of the same class, has бѣжен, cf. убѣжен, from убѣти = *to kill*, and also, less usually, бѣвен ; пѣти = *to drink* has пѣжен, but N.B. *drunk* (= *intoxicated*) = пѣжѣн, but also напѣт чѡвек = *a drunken man*.

Verbs with roots in -р also vary, e.g. за́стрѣти (or за́стрѣти) = *to cover over* (with a carpet, table-cloth) has за́стрѣт, трѣти = *to rub* has трѣвен, e.g. утрѣвен цѣт = *well-trodden road, path*.

This participle is mostly used to take the place of the *passive*, which does not exist in Serbian as a separate voice.

The passive can be expressed either by the 3rd pers. pl. of the present, i.e. by a periphrasis, e.g. во́лѣ га = *they like him* = *he is liked*, from во́лѣти = *to like*, Class V, 2, or by this participle with бѣти = *to be*, e.g.

ја сам хваљен (or for *fem.* хваљена) or хваљен сам = *I am praised.*

ја сам био (*fem.* била) хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) or био сам хваљен (*fem.* била сам хваљена) = *I have been (or was) praised.*

ја ћу бити хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) or бићу хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I shall be praised.*

буди хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) } = *be praised !*
будите хваљени (*fem.* хваљене)

(ја) бях хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I was praised (aorist).*

ја бех хваљен (*fem.* хваљена) = *I used to be or was being praised (imperfect).*

будући хваљен = *being praised.*

бивши хваљен = *having been praised.*

бит хваљен = *to be praised.*

This participle is frequently used impersonally in such sentences as : нађено је на улици стô (хѣладу, N.B. *acc.*) дѣнарѣ = 100 *dinars (frs.) were found in the street* ; ô томѣ је написано мнôго (or пуно) књига = *many books have been written about that.*

Vocabulary

Бôг = *God*

тѣлас = *wave*

сусрет = *meeting*

разговор = *conversation*

жеђ = *thirst*

тужан = *sorrowful*

човеков = *man's, human*

мио, мѣла = *nice, dear*

умор = *fatigue*

количина = *quantity*

добро = *good (subst.)*

ôтаѣбина = *fatherland*

човечѣнство = *mankind*

угледати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to catch sight of*

путôвати (*ipfv.*, III, 3) = *to travel*

прѣпливати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to swim across*

изнемôћи (*pfv.*, I and II) = *to grow weak*

цѣнити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to esteem*¹

ѡстарити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to grow old*

провѡдити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to spend* (of time)

заспати (*pfv.*, V, 3) = *to fall asleep*

спалити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to burn up*

срѹшити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to pull down*

учѣнити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to do*
ражалити се (*pfv.*, V) = *to take pity on*

растѹжити се (*pfv.*, V, 1) =
ражалити се

скѣнути се (*pfv.*, II) = (1) *to jump down from*, (2) *to take off one's clothes*

изгѹбити се² (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to lose oneself, to disappear*

мѡлити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pray* (intrans.)

Reading Exercise

1. Пѹтујѹћи тако дѡђе до јѣдне рѣке и идѹћи пѡред њѣ срѣте се с јѣдним чѡвеком кѡји је јѡхао на бѣлом кѡњу.
2. Чѹјѹћи њѣхов рѣзговѡр ѡна изѡђе пред њѣх и рече им да ѹђу ѹ кућу. 3. Пѡшѡвши мѡло дѡље, (ѡн) дѡђе до јѣдног сѣла. 4. Тѡ рѣкѡвши, скѡчи у рѣку и прѣплива на дрѹгу ѡбалу. 5. Глѣдајѹћи је кѡлико пѡти, ѡн се ведма рѡжали (ог растѹжи). 6. Ўгледѡвши га пред собом на пѹту ѡн се ѡдмах скѣде³ с кѡла и пѡђе му на сѹсрет. 7. Скѡчѣвши у рѣку ѡн се изгуби у тѡлѡсима. 8. Ѳн је говѡрио ѡстарелој мѡјци. 9. Брѡт је мѡ кѡје⁴ вѣре бѣо. 10. Ѳн клѣче пред ѣкону мѡлећи се Бѡгу да му дѡ срѣће. 11. И не ѣмајѹћи њѣкаква пѡсла проводили смо дѡн у шѣтѣи по брѣдима и долиѡнама. 12. Изнѣмогоа од жѣђи и ѹмора лѣже на трѡву и тврѡо заспа. 13. Ѳн је тѹжно глѣдаѡ свѡје лѣпе кѹће спѡљене и срѹшене. 14. Чѡвеков жѣвѡт нѣ цѣни се по великом брѡју гѡдѣнѡ, вѣћ по количѣни дѡбра ѹчињѣнѡг ѡтаѡбини и чѡвѣчѡнству.

¹ цѣна = *price*.

² изгѹбити ог загѹбити (*pfv.*) = *to lose*.

³ Aorist of скѣнути.

⁴ Sc. ма кѡје.

Vocabulary

двор = <i>court</i>	половина = <i>half</i>
народ = <i>people</i>	крв = <i>blood</i>
стража = <i>guard</i>	данак = <i>tribute</i>
динар = <i>dinar, franc</i>	данак у крви = <i>lit. tribute in blood</i>
осуђеник = <i>condemned man</i>	Турчин (pl. Турци) = <i>Turk</i>
крађа = <i>theft</i>	влажан = <i>damp</i>
вера = (1) <i>faith</i> , (2) <i>on parole</i> , also <i>on bail</i>	читав = <i>whole, entire</i>
суд = <i>judgement, court of justice</i>	праведан = <i>just, righteous</i>
	разнобојан = <i>of various colours</i>
оптужити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to accuse</i>	поставити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to place, to set</i>
пштовати (ipfv., III, 3) = <i>to esteem</i>	саградити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to build</i>
окитити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to adorn</i>	украсти (pfv., I, 1, root крад-) = <i>to steal</i>
разгледати (pfv., IV) = <i>to look at, to examine</i>	стати (pfv., cf. p. 106) = <i>to stand still</i>
урадити (pfv., V, 1) = <i>to do</i>	стало ми је до . . . = <i>I am anxious (e.g. to have)</i>
судити (ipfv., V, 1) = <i>to judge</i>	

Reading Exercise

1. Он је оптужен за крађу. 2. Он је био пштован од свбга народа. 3. Ливаде су окићене разнобојним првћем. 4. Да разгледāмо шта је досад урађено на томе имању. 5. Суђено је да се умре. 6. Сви путови су му дтворени. 7. Али јдш није казано дно штд је најлепше. 8. Прдшлого лета његова кућа није била саграђена. 9. Пред двором су постављене страже. 10. Стд је постављен за ручак. 11. Украдено му је стд динара. 12. Осуђеници ће бити пуштени (из затвора) на веру. 13. Питаће се на страшном суду кд је радио праведно а кд не! 14. Ако ти је стало до половине нашега имања даће ти се без речи. 15. За неколико стдтина

гѡдина пѡд Тѹрцима у Србији се плаћао данак у крѡви.
 16. Дѡбре књиге свѡдѡ се читају. 17. Путовало се по
 читаѡ дан а ѡвече се спаѡало на влажној зѡмљи. 18.
 Цѡне га и хѡле на све стране.

CHAPTER 35

THE ORDER OF WORDS AND THE FORMATION
OF SUBORDINATE SENTENCES

THE order of words in Serbian in simple statements presents no difficulty, e.g. пишѡм писмо = *I am writing a letter*; стѡнујѡм код свѡга пријатеља = *I am living at my friend's* (for the present of бѡти and хтѡти, cf. pp. 31, 73). If the personal pronouns are retained, these precede the verb, e.g. ѡн чита нѡвине, а ѡна пије кѡѡу = *he is reading the newspaper, and she is drinking coffee*; ми сѡдѡмо, а ви стојѡте = *we are sitting, and you are standing*.

In negations the negative particle не immediately precedes the verb, e.g. (ја) не разѡмѡм ѡѡѡ рѡч or ѡѡѡ рѡч не разѡмѡм = *I don't understand this word*; if a negative pronoun is added this usually begins the sentence, e.g. нѡшта не разѡмѡм (or не разѡмѡм нѡшта) = *I understand nothing*; нѡкога нѡ видѡм = *I see no one*; нѡкад нѡ јашѡм = *I never ride*; не is not an enclitic, and therefore may begin the sentence.

The presents of the verbs бѡти, имати, and хтѡти are compounded with не, viz. нѡсам, нѡмам, and нѡѡу, cf. pp. 34, 74, 111.

In questions various orders of the words are possible, e.g. (1, assumption) ви разѡмете ѡѡѡ or ви ѡѡѡ разѡмете? = *you understand this?* (2, with the interrogative particle ли, which must follow the verb, being an enclitic) разѡмете ли

(вѣ) ђвѡ ? = *do you understand this ?* (if ли follows the personal pronoun it especially emphasizes it, e.g. ђн ли тѡ рѡди ? = *is it he who is doing this ?*); (Ѣ, with дѡ ли = *whether*) дѡ ли (вѣ) разумѣте ђвѡ ? or дѡ ли (вѣ) ђвѡ разумѣте ? = *do you understand this ?* (4, with зар, cf. p. 33); зар (вѣ) ђвѡ разумѣте ? = *do you really understand this ?* (cf. also p. 33).

In questions beginning with an interrogative pronoun or adverb the personal pronoun, if retained, follows it immediately, e.g. штѡ (вѣ) рѡдите ? = *what are you doing ?* штѡ (ђн) кѡже ? = *what does he say ?* гдѣ ђн стѡнује ? = *where is he staying ?* с кѣме ђна рѡвори ? = *with whom is she talking ?* In negative interrogations the order is : (вѣ) не разумѣте, не разумѣте ли (вѣ), or, most colloquially, зар (вѣ) не разумѣте ? = *don't you understand ?*

In simple sentences made with the compound tenses, i.e. the shortened parts of the auxiliary verbs бѣти and хтѣти, these latter, being enclitics, must *never* begin the sentence, e.g. дѡшли смо ор мѣ смо дѡшли = *we have come*; кѡзѡ је ор ђн је кѡзѡ = *he (has) said (told)*; мѣслио сам ор јѡ сам мѣслио = *I thought*; дѡћи ћемо ор мѣ ћемо дѡћи = *we shall come*; кѡзѡћу ор јѡ ћу кѡзѡти = *I shall tell (say)*; мѣслиће ор ђн ће мѣслѣти = *he will think*; in general it may be said that the forms without the personal pronouns are far commoner.

When other words are added still greater variety is possible, e.g. (1) дѡшли смо јучѣ, ор (2) мѣ смо дѡшли јучѣ, ор (3) мѣ смо јучѣ дѡшли, ор (4) јучѣ смо дѡшли = *we came yesterday*; (1) дѡћи ћу сѣтра, ор (2) јѡ ћу дѡћи сѣтра, ор (3) јѡ ћу сѣтра дѡћи, ор (4) сѣтра ћу дѡћи = *I shall come to-morrow*.

When such sentences are negatived only *one* order is possible, e.g. (мѣ) нѣсмо дѡшли = *we didn't come*; (ђн)

није казао = *he didn't say*; (ја) нисам могао = *I couldn't*; (ми) нећемо доћи = *we shall not come*; (ја) нећу казати = *I shall not say*; (они) неће моћи = *they will not be able*; i.e. preceded by *не* - these words are no longer enclitics.

When such sentences are made interrogative the most usual forms are : *да ли сте (ви) чули ?* or, with the full form of the auxiliary, as *сте* and *ли* are both enclitics, *јесте ли (ви) чули ?* = *did you hear ?* but N.B. *on no account чули ли сте (ви)*; negatived this would be *да ли¹ нисте (ви) чули ?* or *нисте ли (ви) чули ?* = *didn't you hear ?* — *да ли су (они) дошли* or *јесу ли (они) дошли ?* = *have they come ?* *зап су (они) дошли ?* = *have they really come ?* *да ли¹ нису (они) дошли* or *нису ли (они) дошли* or *зап нису (они) дошли ?* = *haven't they come ?* *да ли је (он) отишао ?* or *је² ли (он) отишао ?* = *has he gone away ?* *да ли¹ није отишао ?* = *hasn't he left ?* *да ли ћете (ви) доћи ?* or *хћете ли (ви) доћи ?* or *ви ћете доћи ?* = *will you come ?* *нећете ли доћи ?* = *won't you come ?* *зап ћете (ви) доћи ?* = *will you really come ?* *зап (ви) нећете доћи ?* = *won't you really come ?* But it is important to remember that the infinitive after *хћети* is very frequently resolved into a subordinate clause introduced by *да*, cf. p. 208.

When such interrogative sentences are introduced by an interrogative pronoun or adverb, the auxiliary immediately follows this latter, e.g. *шта сте (ви) казали ?* = *what did you say ?* (answer : *ништа нисам казао* or *нисам казао ништа* = *I said nothing*); *кога сте (ви) питали ?* = *whom did you ask ?* (answer : *никога нисам питао* or *нисам питао никога* = *I asked no one*; *њег* сам питао or *питао сам*

¹ In such phrases *ли* may be and usually is omitted.

² *је ли* can introduce a sentence, though *је* by itself cannot; this does not apply to the other persons.

њѣга = *I asked him*); гдѣ ћете станòвати? = *where shall you stay?* станòваћу у „Хòтел-Балкану“ = *I shall stay in the 'Balkan Hotel'*; кад ћете отпутовати? = *when will you depart?* кад сте дошли? = *when did you arrive?* гдѣ сте нашли òвò? or гдѣ сте òвò нашли? = *where did you find this?*

Use of the reflexive Pronoun *ce*

Examples of this have already been given, cf. pp. 114 ff. It may either precede or follow the verb, but, being an enclitic, cannot begin the sentence, e.g. бòђим *ce* or *jâ ce* бòђим = *I am afraid*¹; вàрàте *ce* or *вѣ ce вàрàте* = *you are mistaken*; нàдају *ce* or òни *ce нàдају* = *they hope*; negatived: не бòђим *ce* or *jâ ce не бòђим* (*not не ce бòђим*), не тýку *ce* or òни *ce не тýку* = *they are not fighting each other* (*not не ce тýку*); put as a question: бојите ли *ce*? or *вѣ ce бојите?* or дà ли *ce* бојите? or зàр *ce* (вѣ) бојите? = *are you afraid?* as a negative question: нè вàрàте ли *ce*? or *вѣ ce нè вàрàте?* or дà ли² *ce* (вѣ) нè вàрàте? or зàр *ce* (вѣ) нè вàрàте? = *are you not mistaken?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is: чèга *ce* (вѣ) бојите? = *of what are you afraid?* чèму *ce* (вѣ) смéјете? = *at what are you laughing?*

In the compound past tense *ce* follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. прèварìо сам *ce* or *jâ сам ce прèварìо* = *I made a mistake, I am wrong*; тýкли су *ce* or òни су *ce тýкли* = *they fought (each other)*; врàтили смо *ce* or мѣ смо *ce врàтили* = *we (have) returned*; in this tense it is very important to notice that the affirmative short form of the 3rd pers. sing. of бѣти is usually omitted, the combination *ce je* or *je ce* being avoided, e.g. врàтио *ce* or òн *ce врàтио* = *he (has)*

¹ N.B. This expression is not used so loosely as in English.

² ли may be omitted here.

returned; задѡцнила се ог ѡна се задѡцнила = *she is late* (lit. *has lated herself*).

In the negative compound past tense the order is either ѡни се нѣсу врѡтили ог нѣсу се врѡтили = *they have not returned* or *did not return*; ја се нѣсам прѣварио ог нѣсам се прѣварио = *I was not wrong*; in the 3rd pers. sing. the order is : нѣје се врѡтио ог ѡн се нѣје врѡтио = *he has not returned*; нѣшта се нѣје дѣсило ог нѣје се нѣшта дѣсило = *nothing has happened* (i.e. нѣје is retained, but је is omitted, cf. above and p. 203).

In the interrogative past tense the order is : ѡни су се врѡтили ? ог дѡ ли су се (ѡни) врѡтили ? ог јѣсу ли се (ѡни) врѡтили ? ог зѡр су се (ѡни) врѡтили ? = *have they returned ?* (N.B. *not* врѡтили ли су се, cf. p. 202); in the 3rd pers. sing. : дѡ ли се (ѡн) врѡтио ? ог зѡр се (ѡн) врѡтио ? ог јѣ ли се (ѡн) врѡтио ? = *has he returned ?*

The negative interrogative past is usually in this order, viz. зѡр се (ѡни) нѣсу врѡтили ? (ог нѣсу ли се (ѡни) врѡтили ? ог ѡни се нѣсу врѡтили ?) = *have they not returned ?* зѡр се (ѡн) нѣје врѡтио ? ог нѣје се (ѡн) врѡтио ? = *has he not returned ?*

In questions beginning with an interrogative word the order is : кѡд сте се (вѣ) врѡтили ? = *when did you return ?* чѣму су се (ѡни) смѣјѡли ? = *what were they laughing at ?* in the 3rd pers. sing. : штѡ се дѣсило (ог догѡдило) ? = *what has happened ?* кѡд се (ѡн) врѡтио ? = *when did he return ?*

In the compound future tense се follows the enclitic auxiliary verb, e.g. ѡмићу се ог ја ћу се ѡмити = *I am going to wash*; сѡд ћу се ѡмити = *now I am going to wash*; ѡдмах ће се (ѡн) врѡтити ог врѡтиће се ѡдмах, ог ѡн ће се врѡтити ѡдмах, ог ѡн ће се ѡдмах врѡтити = *he will return directly*; put negatively : ѡн се нѣће врѡтити ог нѣће се врѡтити = *he*

will not return; put interrogatively: да ли ће се (ћн) врати́ти? or хоће ли се (ћн) врати́ти? or ћн ће се врати́ти? or за́р ће се (ћн) врати́ти? = *will he return?* put negatively interrogatively: за́р се (ћн) неће врати́ти? = *won't he return?* with an interrogative word: ка́д ћете се врати́ти? = *when will you return?*

In such sentences also a subordinate clause beginning with да as often as not takes the place of the infinitive.

There is a peculiar tendency to place the verbal forms је and су after the first word of the sentence, especially between pronoun and noun, instead of between subject and predicate, e.g. на́ше је се́ло најве́ће у о́вome кра́ју = *our village is the biggest in this district*; њи́хови су ро́дитељи врло бо́гати = *their parents are very rich*, but this is considered bad style.

Position of the enclitic Pronouns

The following examples show where these may be placed :
 во́лим га or ја га во́лим = *I like (or love) him*; во́лим је or ја је во́лим = *I like (or love) her*; ви́дї ме or ћн ме ви́дї = *he sees me*; ви́дѣ те or ћни те ви́дѣ = *they see thee*.
 не во́лим га or ја га не во́лим = *I don't like him*; не ви́дїм је or ја је не ви́дїм = *I don't see her*.

во́лите ли је? or ви је во́лите? or да ли је (ви) во́лите? = *do you like her?* по́знаје те ли га? or ви га по́знајете? or да ли га (ви) по́знајете? = *do you know him (personally)?*

не чу́јете ли га? or за́р га (ви) не чу́јете? = *don't you hear him?*

за́што га (ви) не во́лите? = *why don't you like him?*

чу́о сам га or ја сам га чу́о = *I (have) heard him*; ви́дели су ме or ћни су ме ви́дели = *they saw (or have seen) me*.

ни́сам га чу́о or ја га ни́сам чу́о = *I did not hear (or have not*

heard him); нисмо је видели ог ми је нисмо видели =
we did not see (or have not seen her).

јесте ли га (ви) видели? ог да ли сте га (ви) видели? ог
 ви сте га видели? = *have you seen him?*

нисте ли га нашли? ог, better, за̑р га нисте нашли? =
haven't you found him (or it)?

кад сте га видели? = *when did you see him?*

где сте је нашли? = *where did you find her (or it)?*

видећу га сѹтра ог сѹтра ћу га видети ог ја ћу га видети
 сѹтра = *I shall see him to-morrow*; наћи ћу је ог ја ћу
 је наћи = *I shall find her (or it)*; ви ћете ме наћи =
you will find me.

нећете га наћи ог ви га нећете наћи = *you won't find him
 (or it)*; нећу га пустити ог ја га нећу пустити = *I won't
 let him go.*

хoћете ли га (ви) видети сѹтра? ог да ли ћете га (ви) сѹтра
 видети? = *shall you see him to-morrow?*

за̑р је нећете пољубити? = *are not you going to kiss her?*

кад ћете га видети? = *when shall you see him?*

пише ми ог он ми пише = *he writes (to) me.*

не пише ми ог он ми не пише = *he doesn't write to me.*

пишете ли му? ог да ли му (ви) пишете? ог ви му
 пишете? = *do you write (or are you writing) to him?*

зашто ми не пишете? = *why don't you write to me?*

написао ¹ сам му писмо ог ја сам му написао писмо =
I have written him a letter; (писао ¹ сам му = *I have
 written him).*

нисам му написао писмо ог ја му нисам написао писмо =
I haven't written him a letter (нисам му писао = *I have
 not written him).*

¹ Remember : писати (*ipfv.*) = *to write (generally)*; написати
 (*pfv.*) писмо ог карту = *to write a letter or a card.*

јесте ли му написали писмо ? or да ли сте му (ви) написали писмо ? = *have you written him a letter ?*

јесте ли му писали ? = *have you written him ?*

нисте ли му писали ? or за̑р му (ви) нисте писали ? = *have you not written to him ?*

кад сте му (ви) писали ? = *when did you write to him ?*

писаћу му or ја ћу му писати = *I shall write to him.*

нећу му писати or ја му нећу писати = *I shall not write to him.*

хоћете ли му (ви) писати ? or да ли ћете му (ви) писати ? = *are you going to write to him ?*

за̑р му (ви) нећете писати ? = *are you not going to write to him ?*

кад ћете му писати ? = *when are you going to write to him ?*

With reflexive verbs which take the *dative* the order is :
 то ми се (ве̑ма or мно̑го) до̑пада = *I like that (very much) ;*
 то ми се не до̑пада = *I don't like that ;* до̑пада ли вам се то ?
 or да ли вам се то до̑пада ? = *do you like that ?* како вам се
 то до̑пада ? = *how do you like that ?* то ми се до̑пало (from
 до̑пасти) = *I liked that (je omitted) ;* то ми се ни̑је до̑пало =
I didn't like that ; то ми се мно̑го до̑пало = *I liked that very*
much ; то ће вам се до̑пасти = *you will like that ;* то вам се
 неће до̑пасти = *you won't like that.*

When there are two pronouns, that in the *dat.* precedes that in the *acc.*, e.g.

ша̑љем му га or ја му га ша̑љем = *I am sending it him*
 (i.e. any *masc.* or *neut.* thing).

дао сам му га or ја сам му га дао = *I have given it him.*

јесте ли му га дали ? or ви сте му га дали ? or да ли сте
 му га дали ? = *did you give it him ?*

If reference is made to a *fem.* thing, *je* is used, e.g. дао сам му *je*, but as this *je* is the same in form as *je* = *is* (from

бити), it must be replaced by the alternative form for *her*, viz. *ју*, in sentences which contain *је*=*is*, e.g. *did he give it you* (sc. *the book*, књига, *fem.*)? = да ли вам ју је дао? or, better, је ли вам дао књигу? or да ли вам је дао књигу?

Otherwise *је* is always preferred, e.g. *јесте ли је видели?* or *ви сте је видели?* = *did you see (or have you seen) her?*

Note

The English idiom *shall I . . .* must be rendered as follows : да вам наспем¹ још једну шољу кафе? = *shall I pour you out another cup of coffee?* i.e. by the present of a perfective verb and да; да му дам ову књигу? = *shall I give him this book?* да одемо вечерас у кинематограф? = *shall we go to the cinematograph this evening?*

Wishes

Wishes are expressed by the conjunction *нека* or *да* followed by the present or the conditional, e.g. да би Бог дао or нека да Бог! = *may God grant!* N.B. *да*=3rd pers. sing. pres. of *дати*=*to give*, must not be confused with the conjunction *да*. Да живи наш народ! = *long live our nation!* The past participle active is also used in such expressions, e.g. живео! = *long live!* (N.B. *живела!* *fem.*).

The Formation of Subordinate Sentences

ДА

1. After the verbs *хтети*, *моћи*, *морати*, *требати*, *имати* (in the sense *to have to*) and certain others, the infinitive, which is usual in other languages, is not incorrect in Serbian, but its place is most frequently taken by a subordinate clause

¹ Pres. of *насути*, *pfv.*, Class I, 2, cf. p. 105.

introduced by *да* and the verb in the present; whether a perfective or imperfective present is used of course depends on the meaning.

Examples of such sentences have already been given on pp. 89, 117 f., 131, 134. A few more are added here: *хòху да идём вечèрас у пòзорйште* = (1) *I shall go to the theatre this evening*, or (2) *I want to go to the theatre this evening*; *кàд хете да дòхете?* = *when will you come?* *мòрàm да òдём* = *I must go*; *нè могу да вйдйм* = *I cannot see*; *штà хемо да рàдимò?* = *what shall we do?*

In such sentences if the object of the second verb is *тò* (= *that*), this is frequently placed in the principal sentence, e.g. *нè могу тò да рàдйм* = *I cannot do that*; *хòху тò да учинйм* = *I shall do that*; *мòрао сам тò да му кàжём* = *I had to tell him that*; but N.B. *мòрàm да га (or је) вйдйм* = *I must see him (or her)*.

2. *Да* is used to introduce the subordinate clause after all verbs of *declaring, believing, hearing, seeing, commanding, wishing, &c.*, e.g. *кàжём вам да сам бòлестан* = *I tell you that I am ill (masc.)*, *кàжу да је нёко дòшао* = *they say that some one has come*; *кàзао сам му дà је тò йстина* = *I told him that this was the truth*; *кàзали су ми да òна нйе кòд куће* = *they told me that she was not at home* (N.B. in Serbian in such clauses the present must always be used, the past would refer to the remote past); *мйслите ли да хе (òн) дòхи?* = *do you think (that) he will come?* *нàдàm се да хете ми тò учинити* = *I hope (that) you will do this for me*; *вйдйм да не рàзумёре у чёму је ствâр* = *I see that you don't understand what the matter is about (lit. is in)*; *чýо сам да је (òна) вðло бòлесна* = *I have heard (= I hear) (that) she is very ill*; *рёкао му сам да дòђе штò прё* = *I told him to come as soon as possible*; *хтёо сам да вам кàжём* = *I wanted to tell you*. In

all such sentences the conjunction is virtually essential, and must not be omitted, as frequently in English.

3. Followed by *ли*, *да*=*whether*, e.g. *нѣ знѣм да ли је она код куће*=*I don't know whether ('if') she is at home.* For the use of *да ли* in direct questions, cf. pp. 58, 70.

4. *Да* preceded by *као* expresses *comparison*, e.g. *ѣмбран сам као да сам кола вукао*=*I am (as) tired as if I had pulled a carriage.*

5. *Да* is used to express a *result*, e.g. *ја сам толико (ор толико сам) ѣмбран да не могу ништа да радим*=*I am so tired that I can do nothing.*

6. *Да* is used to express a *purpose*, e.g. *дошли смо да разговарамо с вама*=*we have come (in order) to talk with you*; *писао сам му да дознам истину*=*I have written him in order to learn the truth*; when the subject of the clause is not the same as that of the principal sentence the conditional is used, e.g. *писао му сам да би он дознао истину*=*I have written him in order that he may learn the truth.*

In order that is sometimes rendered by *нека* as well as by *да*, e.g. *мет(н)ите моје ципеле крај ватре нека (ор да) се суше*=*put my boots (or shoes) near the fire to get dry.*

7. *Да* is used to express an *unreal condition*, e.g. *да сам знао да сте болесни дошао бих раније да вас видим*=*if I had known that you are ('were') ill, I should have come to see you sooner*; *да сам могао ја бих то учинио*=*if I had been able I should have done this.*

8. As Serbian has no declinable (adjectival) present participles, and no construction such as the 'acc. and inf.', sentences such as 'I see him coming' are paraphrased with *да*, whereupon the object is put in the principal sentence, e.g. *видим га да (ор N.B. где) долази*=*I see him coming*; *чујем је да (ор N.B. где) пева*=*I hear her singing.*

ШТО

9. After verbs of *feeling*, when any cause of the emotion is expressed, што is used to introduce the clause, e.g. радујем се што сте дошли = *I am very glad that you have come*; жао ми је што га нисам видео = *I am sorry that I did not see him*.

ЈЕР—ЗАТО ШТО—ПОШТО

10. *Cause* is also expressed by јер or зато што and пошто, e.g. не могу да пишем јер (or зато што) немам ни пера ни мастила = *I cannot write because I have neither pen nor ink*; волим га јер је (он) искрен = *I like him because he is sincere*; пошто немам новца не могу путovati = *since I have no money I cannot travel*.

ПОШТО

11. Пошто also = *after*, e.g. то се десило пошто сте ви отишли = *that happened after you went away*.

ПРЕ НЕГО ШТО

12. *Before* is rendered by пре него што, or пре него, or пре но што, e.g. то се десило пре него што смо дошли = *that happened before we came*.

ЧИМ

13. *As soon as* is rendered by чим (or чим), e.g. изаћи ћемо (кренућемо се) чим престане (or стаје) киша = *we shall go out (we shall start) as soon as the rain stops*.

ДОК (НЕ)

14. *While* = док, *until* = док не, e.g. док ви пишете писмо ја ћу пушити = *while you are writing the letter I shall smoke*; чекају вас овде док не дођете = *I shall wait (for) you here till you come*.

КАД

15. The conjunction *кад*=(1) *when*, and (2) with the conditional, *if* in *eventual conditions*, e.g. (1) *јавите ми кад ћете да дођете*=*let me know when you are coming*,—*кад дођете* would=—*when you come*; *радоваћу се кад се сврши овај посао*=*I shall be glad when this work is finished*; (2) *ја бих то учинио кад бих могао*=*I should do this if I could*, but N.B. in unreal (past) or future (real) conditions *да* and *ако* must be used, cf. next paragraph, and p. 210.

АКО

16. *If* is rendered by *ако* in past, present, or future *real conditions* and by *ако* with the conditional in future *eventual conditions*, e.g. *хајдемо(те) ако сте готови*=*let us go if you are ready*; *бићу вам врло захваљан ако ми то учините*=*I shall be very grateful to you if you do this for me*; *ако сте прочитали књигу вратите ми је*=*if you have read the book (through) return it to me*; *ако би он дошао јавите ми*=*if he should come, let me know*.

ПРЕМДА—МАДА—ИАКО

17. *Although, even if* are rendered by the compound conjunctions *премда*, *мада*, and *иако* (or *и ако*), e.g. *он је дошао премда (or мада or иако) сам му рекла да остане код куће*=*he came (or has come) although I (fem.) told him to stop at home*.

18. *Relative clauses* are introduced by the relative pronoun *који*=*which*, or conjunctions such as *као што*=*as*, *како*=*how*, e.g. *човек који је дошао тражи вашег брата*=*the man who has come is looking for your brother*; *село које видите је наше*=*the village which you see is ours*; for the *oblique cases of the masculine* *ко* is used, e.g. *човек кога видите је мој брат*=*the man whom you see is my brother*.

Frequently *што* is used for a general relative if the relative pronoun is in the *nom.* or *acc.*, e.g. донео сам вам књигу *што* (for *коју*) сте тражили = *I have brought you the book which you wanted* (lit. *sought*); данас сам видео ону гђопођу *што* (for *која*) је синоћ певала = *I saw the lady to-day who sang at our house last night*; као *што* сам вам казао . . . = *as I told you . . .*; није хтео да ми каже како је дошао до тога новца = *he would not tell me how he came by that money*; *што* више то (or *тим* = *by so much*) боље = *the more the better*; у колико више учите у толико више знате (or у толико ћете више знати) = *the more you learn the more you (will) know*; докле здравља имате дотле сте и срећни = *to what extent you have health to that extent also you are happy* (fortunate); колико ја знам = *as far as I know*; for as concerns cf. p. 120.

19. The expressions *тамањ* *што* and *тёк* *што* followed by *кад* = *barely . . . when . . .*, e.g. *тамањ* (or *тёк*) *што* смо сели да се одморимо *кад* они нам наредеше да се крѣнемо *даље* = *barely had we sat down to rest when they ordered us to go on farther*.

20. *Ћмало* (*штд*) + a negative = *almost*, e.g. *ћмало* *што* нисам пао *ћ* воду = *I very nearly fell into the water* (little was wanting that); *ћмало* не забодравих да вам *тд* кажем = *I almost forgot to tell you that*; *замало* *што* победа није била *наша* = *the victory was almost ours*; *замало* па да победа буде *наша* = *the victory is almost ours*.

As regards the order of words in a subordinate sentence the following points may be noted: (1) the short forms of the verb *бити* follow immediately after the conjunction, e.g. *мислим* да је *двд* *кђа* *његова* *својина* = *I think (that) this house is his property*; *видим* да сте (ви) *ћморни* и *незадовдљни* = *I see that you are tired and displeased*; (2) other

verbs usually follow the conjunction as closely as possible, but separated by the personal pronoun, if this is retained, e.g. чѹо сам да (ви) пишете јѣдну књѣгу = *I have heard that you are writing a book*; знѣм да ђвѣј госпѡдин пише јѣдну књѣгу = *I know that this man is writing a book*; вѣдѣм шта (ви) рѣдите = *I see what you are doing*; нѣ знѣм шта рѣди ђвѣј ѣѣк = *I don't know what this schoolboy is doing*; нѣ знѣм кѡлико кѡшта ђва слѣка = *I don't know how much this picture costs*; (3) in the compound past and future tenses the parts of the auxiliary verbs бѣти and хтѣти must follow immediately after the conjunction, the personal pronouns, if retained, coming next, e.g. ѡтишао сам кѡд сам чѹо да је ђдлесна = *I went away when I heard that she was* (N.B. lit. *is*) *ill*; дѡшао сам чѣм сам чѹо да сте ђдлесни = *I came as soon as I heard that you were ill*; чѹјѣм да сте (ви) бѣли дѣнас кѡд ѣѣх = *I hear that you have been at their house to-day*; нѣсам знѣо да су ѡни бѣли дѣнас у вѣроши = *I did not know that they had been in the town to-day*; знѣм да је ѡна кѹпила нѡв шѣшѣр = *I know that she has bought a new hat*; мѣслѣм да ѣе (ѡн) дѡѣи = *I think that he will come*; мѣслѣм да ѣе дѣнас пѣдати кѣша = *I think it is going to rain to-day*; (4) the reflexive pronoun follows immediately after the conjunction in the present, e.g. нѣдам се да се (ви) дѡбро ђдмѣрате = *I hope that you are having a good rest*, but in the compound past and future tenses comes between the auxiliary and the verb (or the personal pronoun if retained), e.g. нѣ знѣм дѣ ли су се (ѡни) вѣтили = *I don't know whether they have returned*; мѣслѣм да сам се (јѣ) прѣварѣо = *I think I have made a mistake (am wrong)*; нѣ знѣмо кѡд ѣемо се (ми) вѣтити = *we do not know when we shall return* (or: кѡд ѣемо да се вѣтѣмо); мѣслѣм да ѣе вам се дѡпасти ђвѣ књѣга = *I think that you will like this book*; the 3rd person

singular *je* is always omitted in such sentences, e.g. *ми смо отишли пошто се то десило* = *we went away after that happened*.

CHAPTER 36

READING EXERCISE

Vocabulary

сестрица = *sister*
 господар = *master*
 родитељ = *father*
 мува or муха = *fly*
 зрак = *ray*
 пиће = *beverage*
 љубичица = *violet*
 марва = *cattle*
 топ = *gun*
 кућница = *small house*
 огњиште = *fireplace*
 наручје = *lap*
 залогaj = *mouthful*
 осећање = *sense, feeling*
 слобода = *freedom*
 милина = *love*

прѣмаја = *draught*
 борба = *fighting, struggle*
 заход = *setting* (of the sun)
 бос = *barefooted*
 детињаст = *childish*
 очев = *father's*
 жалостан = *pitiiful*
 скроман = *modest*
 небески = *heavenly*
 мудар = *wise*
 свѣстан = *conscious*
 националан = *national*
 урођен = *born, native of*
 крѣв = *bloody*
 последњи = *last*
 сјлан = *strong*

твѣрити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to carry out, to accomplish*
 вадити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to take out*
 праштати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to forgive*
 приличити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to suit, to become*
 јечати (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to groan*
 ронити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to undermine, to erode*

засадити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to plant*
 понашати се (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to behave*
 пропасти (*pfv.*, I and II) = *to perish*
 улазити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to enter*
 отрчати (*pfv.*, V, 3) = *to run off*
 пробудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to waken*
 обасјати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to shine round*

затрѣпати (<i>pfv.</i> , V, 3) = to <i>blink</i>	поседати (<i>pfv.</i> , IV) = to sit in <i>turn</i>
понѣти (<i>pfv.</i> , I, cf. p. 105) = to take with one	враћати се (<i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to return (cf. p. 120)
напáјати (<i>ipfv.</i> , IV) = to <i>delight</i>	огрејати се (<i>pfv.</i> , III, 2a) = to <i>warm oneself</i>
смркнути се (<i>pfv.</i> , II) ¹ = to <i>grow dark</i>	задавити се (<i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to <i>choke</i>
свáнути се (<i>pfv.</i> , II) = to dawn	нáмучити се (<i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to be <i>in pain</i>
наоблáчити се ² (<i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to cloud over	научити се (<i>pfv.</i> , V, 1) = to learn

1. Вода је најздравије пиће. 2. Синоћ сам била у врту берући љубичице све док се видело. 3. Кад смо стигле кући сунце је било на заходу. 4. Ви сте биле на мосту кад смо ми биле на брегу. 5. Лако је говорити али је тешко творити. 6. И жедан сам и гладан (сам). 7. Јесте ли много гладни?—Јесмо. 8. Ја једно пита́м а он дру́го одговара́. 9. Ја псе́то из буна́ра ва́дим а он ме ује́да. 10. Смр́кло се, а њих још не́ма. 11. Св́ануло је одáвно, а ми се још ни́смо кр́енуле. 12. Не́бо се стра́шно наоблáчило, изгле́да да ће па́дати ки́ша. 13. Ва́ља пра́штати и не́пријатељу. 14. Не при́личи му да се пона́ша де́тињасто. 15. Топ за то́пм грми, је́чи, се́ва. 16. Бог не́ да једноме чо́веку свá добра. 17. Тиха вода брег рони. 18. Лети као мува без главе. 19. Мајке не́мám а сестрице не́мám. 20. Овуда су прòшла трé боса де́тета. 21. Ва́тра и водá су добре слуге али зли господари. 22. Кроз отворену капију улази ма́рва, враћа́јући се спòља. 23. Око куће било је засађено силно³ во́ће. 24. Да ти није мене било ти би про́пао. 25. Мило ми је што сте дошли. 26. Не́бо

¹ The *ipfv.* of this verb is смр́кати се, Class IV.

² From облáк = cloud.

³ A lot of.

и море беху мирни када смо улазили у пристаниште. 27. У последњој борби погинуло је више од двеста војника. 28. Спрам наше куће преко потока живела су три брата у скромној кућици. 29. Обдица отрчаше у шуму. 30. У по нџи нешто ме пробуди изненада. 31. Кад уђоше у кућу на огњишту није имало (ог било) ватре да се огреју. 32. Сви поседаше унаоколо под један густ и широки храст. 33. Ништа није човеку жалосније него кад страда од својих пријатеља. 34. Најгори је залогач којим се човек задави. 35. С тебе срећу изгубила нисам, ни са себе ни са своје старе мајке, ни са свога старог родитеља. 36. Ко се не намучи тај се не научи. 37. Идите у село што је пред вама. 38. Пред капијом су трдја кола. 39. Отворена су трдја врата; страшна је прдмаја. 40. После очеве смрти њихова мати остала је са шесторо деце. 41. Кажу нам да је дошао један (ог неки) човек, који вас тражи. 42. Једном стаде отац разговарати са својим синдовима. 43. Тамо, где те је сунце зрацима први пут обасјало и звезде ти с небеског свода први пут затрепале; тамо, где те је мајка први пут од милине у наручју поднела, а отац ти мудрим речима срце напajaо:—тамо је твоја отаџбина! 44. У свима временима Срби су били и остали свесни својих националних права и слободе. 45. Вековима су трајале борбе за права и слободу Српског Народа. 46. Урођено осећање за право и слободу често је водило Србе у крваве борбе за права и слободу других. 47. Не¹ само¹ да нисмо могли, него¹ нисмо ни хтели да заборавимо своја права. 48. Моја врата су отворена не само вама него и сваком поштеном човеку. 49. Ви сте свесни својих права, али јесте ли свесни и својих дужности?

¹ не само . . . него . . . = *not only . . . but . . .*

CHAPTER 37

READING EXERCISE

Vocabulary

крѣлъ = *king*
 момче = *boy*
 јунѣк = *hero*
 сѹдија = *judge*
 старѣц = *old man*
 старѣтељ } = *tutor, guardian*
 старѣлац }
 лѣбѹд = *swan*
 кѣнѣц = *steed*
 брѣк = *moustache* (pl. брѣковн)
 стрѹк = *waist, figure*¹
 рѹно = *fleece*
 жѣто = *corn, cereals*
 (п)шѣница = *wheat*
 крѣло = *wing*; also *lap*
 нѣтпис = *inscription*
 кѣмѣн = *stone*
 бѣлег = *sign*
 грѣб = *grave*
 стѣна = *rock*
 дѣла or дѣла = *valley*
 врѣло or ѣзѣр = *spring* (of
 water)
 лѹка = *bay*
 гѣра = *forest* (on a hill)
 свѣт = (1) *world*, (2) *people*
 ѣме = *name*
 дѹх = *spirit*
 скѣк = *jump*
 рѣдѣст = *joy*

мѹка = *pain*
 вѣрност = *loyalty*
 прѣвод = *translation*
 прѣвоѣѣне = *act of translating*
 злѣ = *evil*
 врѹѣна = *heat*
 стрѣх = *terror*
 срамѣта = *shame*
 прѣст = *simple*
 спѣр = *slow*
 дѣстижан = *who achieves his*
 object
 сѣколов = *falcon's*
 свѣтѣ = *holy*
 тѣнак = *thin*
 смѣѣ = *dark* (colour)
 дугѹѣаст = *oval*
 сѹв (or сѹх) = *dry*
 пѣдугачак = *rather long*
 кѹкаст = *curved*
 нѣмроѣен = *frowning*
 пѹн = *full*
 вѣрен = *engaged* (to be married)
 тѹѣ = *strange*
 гѣ, гѣла = *naked*
 дѣснѣ = *right hand*
 ѣбилан = *plentiful*
 свѣкојѣки = *of every kind*
 Ѧмин = *Amen*
 нѣздрѣвѣе = *to your health*

¹ N.B. стрѹка = *profession, trade*.

напунити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to fill*

утрчати (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to run into*

спасати (*pfv.*, I, 1, root спас-) = *to save*

назвати (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to notice, to look out*

пресудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to decide*

изнети (*pfv.*, I, *irr.*) = *to bring out*

научити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to learn*

спречити (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to prevent*

пробадати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to pierce*

опростити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to forgive*

засејати (*pfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to sow*

нагрејати се (*pfv.*, III, 2 a) = *to warm oneself thoroughly*

веселити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to be merry*

1. Рѹка рѹку мије, а образ обадвије (proverb). 2. На грѹбу му стоји и сад белег, прѹст камен без икаква натписа. 3. Бог је спр, али достижан. 4. Оно је двор краља Петра. 5. Ово је кућа моје тетке. 6. Дај ми, Боже, дци сѹколове и бијела крила лабудова. 7. У име оца и сина и светогā духа ! Амин ! 8. Дѹђе момче црна ѹка на коњицу лака скока. 9. Његов отац је човек добре рѹке. 10. Видео сам једног старца беле косе и браде. 11. Он је био танка и висока струка, смеђе косе и врло малих брковā, дугуљастих сѹвих обрāзā, ширѹких ѹста и пѹдугачка, мало кукаста носа. 12. Имāм дѹста вина и ракије. 13. Уђе намргођен не рекāвши рѹчи. 14. Једанāестог аѹгуста ѹдѹђе гѹдине напунити тридесет гѹдинā. 15. Она утрча пѹна радости и рѹче да је верена. 16. Сѹдите да се сѹнца ¹ нагрејемо. 17. Бог ће га спасти мѹке и смрѹти. 18. Ёво вам вашѹг брāта. 19. Нисам, мајко, живота ми мѹга ² ! 20. Не ѹдри ³ га, тако ти Бога ⁴ ! 21. У превѹђењу сваке

¹ Gen. sing.

² 'I didn't (do it), mother, upon my life !' ми = *to me* is redundant in English. This is a common saying : живота ми alone = 'upon my word'.

³ Imper. of ѹдарити = *to strike*.

⁴ Lit. 'thus to thee of God' = *in God's name*.

књиге трѣба пазити на вѣрност прѣвода. 22. Има људи који би пристали то да урѣде. 23. Има нас свакојаких ! 24. Хајдемо суду да нам пресуди. 25. Изнесите ми нове хаљине. 26. Невоља сваџему човека научи. 27. Отворите му врата да уђе. 28. Мили Бѣже, помози свакоме, сваком брату и добру јунаку. 29. Којој овци рѹно смѣта, онде није ни овце ни рѹна (proverb). 30. Не верује ни својим рођеним очима. 31. Ко се туђем злѹ весели, нећ се своме наџа. 32. Нико сам себи не може бити судија. 33. Овај човек је старатељ оное сирот(н)ом детету. 34. Нека ти је наздравље. 35. Благо мајци која га родила. 36. Чисту образу мало воде трѣба. 37. Врућина ми је. 38. Ја обиђох многе доле, многе реке, многа врела,—гѣре, луке, стѣне гѣле, многе двѣре, многа сѣла. 39. Нега није страх од смрти. 40. Срамѣта га (је) било да уђе. 41. Пробѣда ме с дѣсне стране. 42. Мили Бѣже, на свѣму ти хвала. 43. Оче, опрѣсти ми. 44. Ми пишемо рѹком и пером. 45. Он ђиџе земљом и свијетом. 46. Недељом иџемо у цркву. 47. Ко је тебе поставио судијом наџ нама. 48. Будите задовољни оним што имате. 49. Она љива је засејана пшѣницом. 50. Србија је ђбилна жѣтом.

CHAPTER 38

READING EXERCISE

Vocabulary

Дѹнав = *Danube*
 Сава = *Sava*
 рѣтар = *farmer*
 звѣр = *beast*
 рѣна = *wound* ¹

прѣја = *maize-bread*
 погача = *unleavened bread*
 пѣра = *coin* (a centime)
 дѣм = *smoke*
 врѣх = *top, summit*

¹ N.B. (x)рѣна = *food*.

околина = *district, neighbour-
hood*

римски = *Roman*

моћ = *might*

мноштво = *quantity*

незнање = *ignorance*

услов = *condition*

погвор = *contradiction*

шаља = *joke*

завист = *envy*

бодж = *battle*

несрећа = *misfortune*

мисао = *thought*

пркос = *spite*

луд = *foolish, silly, mad*

напустити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to
leave*

осудити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to con-
demn*

познати (*ipfv.*, III, 2 a) =
to know

чувати (*ipfv.*, IV) = *to keep*

упропастити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to
destroy*

гонити (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to pursue*

погледати (*pfv.*, IV) = *to throw
a glance*

спустити (*pfv.*, V, 1) = *to
lower, to put down*

опрати (*pfv.*, I, 3) = *to wash*

попети се (*pfv.*, III, 1 b) =
(1) *to climb*, (2) *to be impor-
tunate, to 'keep on about'*

држити се (*ipfv.*, V, 1) = *to
keep company with*

постидети се (*pfv.*, V, 2) = *to
be ashamed*

нагнути се (*pfv.*, cf. p. 105) =
to bend

дати се (*pfv.*, *irr.*) = *to be
plunged*

крити се (*ipfv.*, III, 1 a) = *to
hide (intrans.)*

свадити се } (*pfv.*, V, 1) =
завадити се } *to quarrel*

1. Наша кућа је у пољу. 2. Пред црквом стајаше
мноштво света. 3. Гледajte¹ те се вратите пре ноћи.
4. Од јуче је једнако² у гробници. 5. Овај војник је
умро од рана. 6. Јесте ли ово учинили намерно или из
незнања? 7. По његовој заповести ви морате напустити
ово место. 8. Ни под каквим условима не можете
прећи границу. 9. Десет људи осуђено је на смрт.
10. Јесте ли икад шетали поред мора? 11. Ни риба
без воде, ни звр без гдје. 12. Два човека јахала су на
коњима поред његових кола. 13. Ако прођете поред

¹ 'Mind,' 'try to.'

² Continuously.

његове куће речите му да ћу доћи вечерас. 14. Подпели смо се на врх брѣга и разгледали смо дивну околину. 15. Подпеше ми се с тим наврх главе. 16. Моја кућа је иза онога брѣга. 17. Узмите хартију из те кутије. 18. Идите дуж овога пута па ћете најћи на једну кућу с десне стране. 19. Срби живе с две стране Саве и Дунава. 20. После неколико дана она оде у госте својим родитељима. 21. Нисам знала да имате још сестара осим оне коју познајем. 22. Данашње српске земље биле су некада под римском управом. 23. Под овим каменом има раква. 24. У ратара црне руке а бела ¹ подгача (proverb). 25. Чувај беле паре за црне дане. 26. У млађег подговора нема. 27. Ја не могу упропастити себе због твоје луде главе. 28. Он га је ударио из шале. 29. Немојте никога гонити из зависти. 30. Све што чинимо, чинимо из љубави према ваљем народу. 31. Овај пут води кроз наше село. 32. Доћи ћемо кроз два, три дана. 33. Сиђите низ две степенице. 34. Моја соба је при земљи. 35. Ви као да ² нисте при себи кад то радите. 36. Они ће се вратити са мнош. 37. С ким си, онакв си. 38. Кажи ми с ким се дружиш па ћу ти рећи какав си. 39. Мој брат је погинуо у рату (боју) против Турака. 40. Она се постиде и погледа пред се. 41. Ако немате чапу наднесите се над извор па пијте. 42. Пред тобом је срећа и несрећа. 43. Све то спустите на земљу. 44. Дао се у мисли и ништа не чује шта му се говори. 45. У свакој кући има дима. 46. То није у његовој власти. 47. Ко се од људи крије боље да га није (proverb). 48. Вода опере све осим греха (proverb). 49. Свадили се врапци око туђе прѣје (proverb). 50. Не чините ништа уз пркос.

¹ Sc. nice.² As if.

SUBJECT-INDEX

- Accents, 20 ff.
- Adjectives, 61 ff., 84 ff.
- Adverbs of manner, 182 ff.
- Adverbs of place, 180 f.
- Adverbs of quantity, 184.
- Adverbs of time, 179 f.
- Alphabet, 10 ff.
- Aorist, 81, 187 ff.
- Aspects of the verbs, 121 ff.
- Cases (use of the), 39 ff., 153 ff.
- Causal clauses, 211.
- Comparison, 84 ff.
- Concessive clauses, 212.
- Conditional, 81 ff., 178.
- Conditional clauses, 211, 212.
- Conjunctions, 189 f., 200-215.
- Consecutive clauses, 210.
- Date (the), 98.
- Days of the week, 98, 136 f.
- Definitive pronouns, 165.
- Degrees of comparison, 84, 87.
- Demonstrative pronouns, 55 f.
- Dialects, 22 ff.
- Enclitics, 21 f., 205-208.
- Final clauses, 210.
- Food, 43, 51, 52, cf. 141, 143, 144.
- Future, 73 ff., 169 f.
- Genitive after negative, 138.
- Gerunds, 194.
- Imperfect, 91, 188.
- Impersonal verbs, 114 ff.
- Indefinite adverbs, 170 ff.
- Indefinite pronouns, 170 ff.
- Interjections, 190 f.
- Interrogative pronouns, 76 ff.
- Marriage, 127, 157, 160.
- Meals, 143, 144.
- Money, 119, 121, 159.
- Months, 136 f.
- Nationalities, 57 f.
- Negations, 34, 113, 200-208.
- Numerals, 92 ff.
- Participles, 194 ff.
- Past (compound), 59 ff., 70, 148 ff.
- Personal pronouns, 54 f.
- Pluperfect, 71, 189.
- Possessive adjectives, 63 f.
- Possessive pronouns, 66 ff.
- Prepositional prefixes, 123 ff.
- Prepositions, 151 ff.
- Present, 31 ff., 101 ff.
- Price, 121, 159.
- Professions, 51 ff.
- Pronouns, 54, 66, 135, 165, 170, 205 ff.
- Questions, 32 ff, 113 f., 200-208.
- Reflexive pronouns, 55, 203 ff.
- Reflexive verbs, 114 ff.
- Relationships, 68 ff., 72.
- Relative clauses, 212, 213.
- Relative pronouns, 76 ff.
- Seasons, 166.
- Shopping, 51 ff.
- Subordinate sentences, 200 ff , 208 ff.
- Substantival suffixes, 38 f
- Substantives, 36 ff.
- Temporal clauses, 211.
- Time of day, 98 f.
- Verbs, 101-135, 139-148.
- Weather, 116, 117.
- Wishes, 208.

PRINTED IN ENGLAND
AT THE OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS

Call No. 491.82

SUB
~~secs~~

Accession No.

9834

Title

Serbian Grammar.

Author

Subotic, Dragutin & Nevi-
11 201 00 11 A

FOR INFORMATION

FOR CONSULTATION
ONLY